

## A K Pop Idol

### INTRODUCTION

Alex was a guy with a big dream. Since childhood, when he first heard the riffs of guitarists like Jimi Hendrix, Keith Richards and Eric Clapton in the old vinyl LPs of his father, he knew he wanted to be a rockstar.

Early in his teens, Alex bought his first guitar after doing a number of services to neighbors during the summer, and soon he formed his first band.

Our story begins when Alex was 25 years old. He hadn't reached the fame yet, but he believed he was on the right track. His band at that time, Mr. Blue Sky, had already conquered a loyal audience in the town and the views of the group's songs on the internet were growing every day.

However, Alex was a down-to-earth guy. He knew that to be a rockstar he needed more than talent and dedication - he also needed a lot of luck.

So, over the years, he not only prepared himself to be a singer and a guitarist, but he also studied everything related to music. So, at worst, Alex could work as a composer, arranger, producer or studio musician. This way, he would still in touch with his great passion, at least.

A year earlier, after saving money for a long time, Alex had opened his own music studio, and the enterprise was going great. Alex was able to sustain himself only with music, and he was proud of that.

Meanwhile, he continued playing in local clubs with his band, dreaming of the day that someone, a major music producer or something, would come to change his life and turn him into a star.

What Alex didn't know was that this day was very close, but things would be a little different from what he was picturing...

### END OF INTRODUCTION



## PART 1

There was a major university in the town where Alex lived, which received exchange students from around the world.

Being a musician in a university town was a good thing, as Alex knew very well. With so many young people around, the shows of his band were always crowded. In addition, the exchange students helped to spread Alex's songs by other parts of the planet.

There was another advantage, however. Alex had a thing for Asian girls, and there was always a lot of them in his presentations.

Alex was a handsome guy and a star (at least in his town), so he had no trouble seducing the girl he wished after the shows.

At one Saturday night, during a presentation, Alex was just thinking about that as he looked at a beautiful Asian girl who was in the front row.

"Oh, she's really hot!" he thought.

Her name was Park Hara, a 19 years old Korean girl who had arrived in the United States a few weeks earlier. Alex talked to her after the show and, as expected, he managed to win her.

They began to meet frequently since then. Alex soon learned they had much in common. Park Hara was also a singer who dreamed of being famous. She and three of her friends, who were also exchange students, had a K-pop group, which had already participated in some small presentations. She also said that, unfortunately, the lead singer had left the group, and since then they were looking for another girl to fill the position.

Alex wasn't an expert in K-pop, but he had already seen numerous videos on youtube of these girls singing and dancing around. Oh, he loved them! They were so cute and sexy! He became aroused just imagining his new girlfriend dancing for him.

He then offered to assist her. He said he could help her write some songs, and then she and the other girls could record the songs in his studio and he would do the music production. After that, she could send the material to the Korean record labels.

"Oh, Alex, that's so wonderful!" Park Hara said, with her broken English. "I don't know how to thank you!"

"I know very well" Alex thought, smiling...

-----

They wrote two songs: "Summer Love" and "My Sweet Boy". Park Hara wrote the lyrics of the verses and Alex took care of the melodies and the lyrics of the chorus (in k-pop, the lyrics of the chorus are almost always in English).

When they were recording, Alex realized that the lack of a lead singer was really making a big difference. The girls were reasonable singers, but something was missing.

Alex thought that... he had a very high voice with great falsettos, like Robert Plant or Adam Levine and James Blunt for the youngest. He certainly could imitate a female voice in that recording... If any record company liked the songs, the girls could find a female singer later... But he didn't want to do that. It would be too humiliating to sing those girly songs imitating a girl...

Then he looked at Hara Park. Oh, crap, she was so hot! Alex could do anything to see her happy. After all, if she was happy, that meant she could make Alex happy!

"Okay, girls, I'll tell you what we gonna do" he started, hardly believing he was going to do that.

-----

A few weeks later, Park Hara entered the studio very enthusiastic.

"You won't believe that!" she said.

"What happened?"

"A record company sent a contract, Alex! They want to hire our group!"

"Wow, that's fantastic!" Alex said. He was very happy with the news, but he was also a little jealous. He had sent so many recordings of his band to record labels, but never received a response...

They then signed the contract, which was obviously written in Korean, so Park Hara helped Alex. The guy liked to know he would earn a reasonable amount of money for being one of the authors of the songs. In addition, the value may increase if the group was successful.

That night, Alex and Park Hara went out to celebrate. However, there was a small problem about which they hadn't knowledge yet. One of the clauses of the contract had passed unnoticed by the girl, probably because of her excitement. A clause that could have serious implications...

END OF PART 1



## PART 2

A few days later, Park Hara entered the studio with a worried expression.

"What's wrong, babe?" Alex asked.

"Oh, Alex, I'm so, so sorry!"

"What are you talking about?"

"I made a huge mistake, Alex, and I just realized this now."

She then explained that when she sent the recording of the group for the Korean record company, she had mistakenly marked Alex not only as one of the composers, but also as one of singers. She then said that only in the day before she had read the contract more carefully, and on it was written that Alex was committed to join the group as the lead singer. Unfortunately, a copy of the contract had already been sent to Korea.

"But I thought that the k-pop groups were composed exclusively by persons of the same sex. Alex said.

"They are, Alex. That's the problem. Your name is unisex, you know, so they must be thinking that you're a girl."

She then stared at the guy, anguished. To her surprise, Alex started laughing.

"This could be really funny! Imagine, they are expecting a girl, and I appear in Korea saying: Hi, I came to join the group!"

He kept laughing for a while.

"How will you tell them the truth?"

"I... I can't, Alex."

"What? You are mocking me, right? Right?"

"Look, Alex, you signed the contract. I know it was all my fault, but ..."

"I'm not a girl, Park Hara! And even if I were, I'd be an American girl!"

"I know. Maybe the record company want an American singer in the group to make k-pop more popular in United States... As I said, Alex, you signed the contract. You, even without knowing, made a commitment. This is very serious in Korea. We value honor..."

"We, Americans, value honor, too!"

"I know, but it's different... If you back out, they will charge the contract termination fine, equivalent to fifty thousand dollars. In addition, our group will never have another chance..."

"Fifty thousand US dollars?! This is madness! Look, Park Hara, we have to find another way! I can not be the lead singer of your group!"

"But your voice..."

"I'm not a girl!" Alex cried. "Look at me. Do you think I can pretend to be a girl?"

"Well, with a little work... Like I said, Alex. I know this is all my fault. You can have my share of the money. Furthermore, the contract is for only one year. After that, you will be free, and if the group become famous, you can even be rich."

"That's not the point, Park Hara! I could never look like a girl! This would never work!"

"Give me a month. I'll train you and improve your appearance. Nothing permanent... I won't even mess up with your hair. We can use a wig and stuff... If after a month you still think that this will not work, I won't say anything about it anymore."

Alex knew it had no chance of working, but he was tired of arguing.

"Fine!" he said, without thinking. "Since I know exactly what you're doing, I agree. In the meantime I will look for a lawyer to find out what we can do about this situation."

"Thank you, Alex! So, let's start your training!"

"What? Now?"

"Yes. You need to shave and I'll comb your hair in a different way, just to have an idea of the kind of wig that will work with your face. I think you'll look pretty!"

END OF PART 2



### PART 3

"I told you!" Alex said, laughing, after Park Hara dressed him in women's clothes, put a wig on his head and some makeup on his face. "It won't work! I do not look like a woman. I look ridiculous!"

Park Hara knew that Alex was right. Still, she would not give up so fast.

"I see potential in you" she said. "You just need to lose a few pounds. I think that ten will be enough. So, we can use breast forms and a corset. After that..."

"What a minute! Don't you think you're going too far?"

"C'mon, Alex! That's not a big deal! You can recover ten pounds in a week! In addition, you promised that you would collaborate for a month! You need to keep your word!"

Alex thought of saying he was out. He knew it was a waste of time. However, he didn't want to upset Park Hara. God, she was so hot! He didn't want to lose her. So, he said yes again...



#### PART 4

And then, the training began in earnest. At request of Park Hara, Alex told everyone that he had to leave town for a month, so they could work at the studio without anyone interfering.

The girl has set a strict diet to Alex, cutting all the fat and calorie foods. In addition, they began working out every day. The exercises set by Park Hara were designed to let Alex's body skinnier, more flexible and more elegant. She wanted him to lose all his muscles, although she had hidden this information.

Alex almost quit at the beginning. However, the fact that he was surrounded by four beautiful Korean girls was too fantastic for him. It was almost a dream! They were wearing clothes so tight and provocative. They were so sexy...

For this reason, Alex didn't complain when Park Hara said he had to start taking some pills that would help him to lose weight; not even when she came up with a bizarre thermal underwear that would make him lose a lot of calories every day. He had to wear it all the time under his gym clothes, and he felt like a chicken being roasted.

At the end of each day, he was so exhausted that he had no energy to even look his reflection at the mirror carefully. If he was doing this, he would see how much his body was changing so quickly...

END OF PART 4



PART 5

After just two weeks, Alex had already lost much more than ten pounds. He just realized this certain day when he told to Park Hara he needed a day off, because he was exhausted. When he tried to put his clothes, everything was extremely loose.

"WHAT THE HELL?!" he shouted astonished.

"What's wrong, dear?" Park Hara asked.

"What's wrong? Look at me! Look at my body!"

"Well, I think you look really cute!"

"That's not funny, Park Hara! And you know what? This is over! This has gone too far!"

"Oh, don't say that, sweetheart! You just need to relax a little. Maybe you and me, you know..." she said, rubbing the underside of the Alex's stomach, which made him immediately aroused.

"Are you serious?"

Amazingly, Alex and Park Hara had not had sex yet. She had said that Korean girls were modest and they didn't do that so quickly. However, she seemed to have changed her mind.

"Yes" she said giggling. "But I do not want to hear anymore that you will give up, okay?"

"Sure!"

"Good girl..."

"Park Hara, I'm not..."

"Shhh... Just relax, sweetie."

END OF PART 5



PART 6

"Stop, Park Hara! You're killing me!"

"Nonsense! I know that you can do that!"

One morning, Park Hara had brought to the studio something that for Alex looked a lot like a torture device. She explained that that device would make the guy's body more flexible, something very important for him to dance with the girls.

She then attached Alex's legs to the device and started spinning a pulley.

"ARGHHH" Alex shouted.

"Hold on a little longer, dear!"

"But my legs..."

"You did it! You finally did a split!"

Alex saw that she was right. He was sitting on the floor with his legs straight out and flat along the floor in opposite directions.

"Fantastic!" he said, sarcastically. "Now can you release me, please?"

"Not yet, sweetheart!"

"What you mean?"

"We need to let your body more flexible, remember? So you have to stay in this position every day for some time."

"How long exactly?"

"Let's say forty minutes or so..."

"That's impossible! My penis is being completely crushed, Park Hara!"

"Well, I will think of a solution to this problem..."

-----

The next day, she came up with something called gaff. She then helped Alex to dress that weird thing.

"Much better!" she said. "Now you can execute a split without worrying about your 'little friend'. Plus, your crotch is much more elegant! Now put your outfit for the day."

Alex saw that the clothes were a bit more feminine than usual. In addition, Park Hara placed a pink hair bow on his head.

"Why do I need a hair bow?" Alex asked.

"Because it suits your sneakers. Also, you look very pretty."

Alex was about to protest, but Park Hara was faster:

"Now, be a good girl and start your exercises. I promise I'll make you up tonight." she added, rubbing his flat crotch. His cock tried to react, but it was firmly stuck in the gaff.

He was so aroused that he obeyed the girl and he didn't even realize that once again she had referred to him as 'girl'...

END OF PART 6



PART 7

After another week, Alex had lost even more weight. In addition, because of the exercises that Park Hara was forcing him to do, his body was becoming more slender, elegant and feminine. His muscles were rapidly disappearing and his body (especially his legs) was much more flexible.

"Good morning, cutie" Park Hara said.

"Please, Park Hara" Alex said. "I already told you I don't like when you call me like that!"

"Oh, but you didn't complain about it last night" she said, sensually. "In fact, I remember that you cried that you were my naughty girl!"

That was true and Alex felt ashamed to remember the night before.

"But you forced me to say that!" Alex complained.

"Oh, are you pouting? Sooo sweet! So, that's what you are? A submissive girl who likes to be controlled in the bed?"

"I'm not a..."

"Shhh..." Park Hara whispered, rubbing Alex's body. "You do not have to pretend, sweetheart. Just tell me the truth. You are a submissive and delicate girl, right?"

"You're wrong!"

"So bad. I thought we could have some fun before the workout..."

"That would be great!"

"If you want it, tell me that you're my submissive girl."

"But Park Hara..."

"Now!" she said, rubbing his cock. Oh, he was so aroused that he could say anything she wished...

-----

Half an hour later, Park Hara told him to take a shower and meet her in the studio.

"I'd like to introduce you to your new best friends!" she said.

"What are these things?" Alex asked, worried.

"Your corset and your breast forms."

Then, the girl glued the breast forms in Alex's chest with surgical glue.

"This is weird" Alex said. "They feel so real!"

"That's wonderful, right? I'm sure a girl like you will love to have breasts!" she teased. "Now, let's put the corset!"

"Hmm, Park Hara, it's too tight!"

"Nonsense, silly girl! You'll get used to it."

"I'll have to keep these things all day?"

"In fact, you'll keep these things all the time from now on."

"What?!"

"Enough talk. Now we begin the workout. We have a busy day ahead."

END OF PART 7



PART 8

Alex, Park Hara and the other girls continued working out every day and the exercises were getting harder and harder. At the beginning, Alex had trouble adapting to the corset, which restricted his movements a lot. In addition, those damn breast forms had changed his center of gravity. Park Hara said he didn't need to worry about it, because he would get used soon.

Alex also realized that these "new accessories" were changing the way he moved. His movements and mannerisms were becoming more feminine, and there was nothing he could do to prevent it.

To make matters worse, Hara Park one day decided to pierce his ears. Alex said that it wasn't right, because they had agreed that he wouldn't be forced to make any permanent change in his body. However, Park Hara insisted that the holes would close when Alex stopped wearing earrings. The guy ended up doing the will of the girl again.

"Oh, Alex, you look soo cute!" she said after piercing his ears, and Alex just sighed...

END OF PART 8



PART 9

And then, exactly a month after the start of the training, Park Hara placed Alex in front of the mirror again. The period they had agreed was over. That was the day that Alex would see if he really could look like a girl or not.

Once again, Park Hara putted a wig on his head and make-up on his face. In addition, the day before he had spread a depilatory cream all over his body, and his skin was as smooth as a baby's.

With regard to the outfit, Park Hara had selected a look unquestionably feminine, but casual. That way, she wanted to show Alex that he could look like a girl even without so much effort.

"So, sweetie" she started. "What do you say? Are you convinced that you can pretend to be a girl? Or better... are you convinced that you can be a girl 'for real' over the next year?"

Alex looked at his reflection and he just didn't know what to say...

END OF PART 9



PART 10

Alex couldn't believe in his eyes. He was really looking like a girl! How Park Hara had done it?

Obviously, he wasn't looking as the prettiest girl in the world, since his face still looking a little manly (thankfully!), but this fack was being undercover by the makeup. His body, however, with the help of the corset and the breast forms, was looking unquestionably feminine.

Alex concluded that he had allowed it to went too far. All because of his fetish by Korean girls. He needed to do something.

After admitting to Park Hara that he was really looking like a girl (yes, she forced him to say that), he decided it was time to look for a lawyer to know what he could do about that damned contract.

He pulled on one of his old shirts (which was extremely loose), but none of his pants fell into place in his new slim body. Feeling extremely humiliated, he was forced to borrow one of the pants of Park Hara.

"Of course, sweetie" she said. "All for my girl!"

It took many hours, but Alex finally found a lawyer in a nearby town who spoke Korean. He then went quickly to the man's office. That lawyer would surely know how to help Alex. That was his last hope...



## PART 11

"Are you feeling better, Alex?" Park Hara asked. As soon as the guy came out of the shower, she gave him some comfortable clothes to wear.

"How can I be feeling better? Did you hear what I told you before?"

Alex had gone to the lawyer's office. He showed the contract to the man and, at first, he made up a story saying that 'his sister' had signed the document without knowing what she was signing. He then asked if the lawyer thought that the contract was valid in this situation.

"Well, the contract is surely valid, but she can try to contest the it judicially. This wouldn't be a simple procedure, though, and she would have to spend a lot of money."

"Really?" Alex said, distressed. "But there isn't a simpler alternative? Maybe if she tried to talk with the record company..."

"This isn't a good idea. My father was a Korean man, and I know very well that these people don't like persons who don't honor their commitments. In addition, if they offered a contract to your sister they think she has a good chance to be successful. A record label will never want to lose money."

"Hmm... and if my sister is a guy?" Alex asked, completely embarrassed because of that ridiculous question.

"What you mean, exactly?" the lawyer asked, raising an eyebrow.

"What would happen if a man had signed this contract by accident?"

"Please, don't tell me that you did such stupid thing! If a man did that, the record company surely would think that this person was making fun of them and would sue him until get the last penny of this unfortunate man!"

After that, Alex left the office of the lawyer completely desperate.

"So, what we'll do now, Park Hara?" Alex asked, for the umpteenth time.

END OF PART 11



## PART 12

Knowing that Alex was very stressed because of all that had happened that day, Park Hara decided to talk to him the next day.

"Did you sleep well, Alex?"

"Of course not! This situation is driving me crazy!"

"Look, honey, I know this is difficult, but there is only one thing we can do now. You have to pretend to be a girl and get into our group. As I said before, I know that this whole mess is my fault and, therefore, you can take my share of the money."

"Money is not the problem here, Park Hara. I just can't pretend to be a girl!"

"Why not? You even admitted that I managed to make you look like a girl."

"But I don't have to just look like a girl, right? I also have to behave like one. For a whole year!"

"I know this is scary. Even if you don't believe me, I'm also frightened by all this. I mean, I'm already a girl, of course, but I'll have to perform in front of thousands of people. This is also something too big for me. So, instead of looking all at once, I'm trying to think of each step at a time."

"What do you mean?"

"Well, if you think about that fact that you'll have to be a girl for a whole year it seems like something unbearably scary, right?"

"Yes."

"But what if instead you just focus on today? If I say to you that today you just have to train the way you walk it freak you out?"

"In fact, no."

"See what I mean? Step by step we can get there!"

"This seems like a reasonable plan, Park Hara, but still..."

"Shhh... do not think about the future! Focus on Today. Step by step... in a year, all this will just be a funny story and if all goes well you will have so much money that you'll be able to work on your music without worrying about whether you'll be able to pay the bills at the end of the month. That wouldn't be great? I know we can make it work..."

END OF PART 12



### PART 13

"Okay, let's do it."

Alex could hardly believe in his own words. He was accepting to live as a girl for a whole year. Not only that - he was accepting to be a K-pop Idol!

However, what choice did he have? He just thought about the money he would receive. Also, he followed the advice of Park Hara and tried not to think about the whole thing at once. "One step at a time," he repeated like a mantra.

They began the new phase of the training that afternoon, since they would have to travel to the South Korea in just three weeks.

"Let's start with something simple" Park Hara said after dressing Alex with an outfit even more girly than normal. "As I said before, we need to improve your walk. Watch how I do it and try to emulate me. No, you're doing it wrong! Your steps need to be shorter. Place one foot in front of the other! Now move your hips. A little better, but don't look to the ground! Keep your head up. Good. You're learning, sweetie. Now let your arms close to your body and let your wrists loose. Very nice, girl! You have potential..."

Park Hara proved to be a relentless teacher and Alex had to keep training his walk for several hours. His face was burning in shame. As if the fact that he was dressed like a sissy weren't enough, he was also being forced to walk like one.

What Alex didn't know was that his situation would get much worse pretty soon...

END OF PART 13



PART 14

"Okay, Alex" Park Hara said. "Today, we will continue to train your walk, but this time you will be wearing a skirt."

"A skirt?!"

"That's right, cutie..."

"But..."

"No buts, Alex. All the girls wear skirt and you're one of us now, right? You need to learn to walk and sit with a skirt sooner or later. Also, you will see that your legs will look very pretty!"

Alex felt even more emasculated wearing a skirt. He realized that his walk became even more feminine, and he was forced to keep his knees together when he sat, or else everyone would see his panties.

To make matters worse, Park Hara handed him a purse.

"From now on, you will carry it at all times, except when we are working out."

"Why?"

"Because a girl needs a bag, silly! Where else will you carry your makeup, your comb and your tampons?"

"Park Hara, why the hell I need tampons?"

"Shhh... You ask too many questions, sweetie. Just obey me, okay? I know what I'm doing!"

END OF PART 14



## PART 15

Alex was already able to sing like a girl, sure, but Park Hara decided it was time for him to learn to also speak like one. In addition, she began teaching him some basic expressions in Korean, like 안녕하세요 (Hi), 잘 지내셨어요 (How are you?), 너무 감사합니다 (Thank you) and 만나서 반갑습니다 (Nice to meet you).

"Park Hara, we have to travel to Korea in a few weeks! There is no way to learn Korean so quickly!"

"Talk with your female voice, Alex! Don't forget that you have to talk like that all the time to get used to it. I know you won't be fluent in Korean so quickly, but you need to start learning, right? You'll have to sing in our language, after all!"

The lesson continued for several hours, until they were already beginning to establish some basic dialogues. At the end, she handed him some DVDs.

"These are some interviews with K-pop singers" she explained. "I want you to watch it to improve your vocabulary. Also, pay attention to the way they behave in order to improve your mannerisms. I want to see some progress tomorrow."

When Alex began to watch the DVDs, he felt a shiver. Those girls were so beautiful and cute... He thought that they are just perfect. And very soon he would be one of them...

END OF PART 15



ART 16

"You're doing great, Alex" Park Hara said some days later. "But I think that we have to push it harder."

"What you mean?"

"You're already starting to sound and behave like a girl at all times, but I'm afraid that it isn't enough. For this to work, you have to believe that you're a girl! You have to forget that you were a man!"

"I don't know if I can do that, Park Hara."

"But you have to try, Alex! Do you want that someone find out that you are a man when we're in a show?"

"No!"

"Why not?"

"Because that would be extremely humiliating!"

"So you're saying that being a man is something humiliating for you?"

"Not exactly, I mean..."

"Yes or no, Alex!"

"Y-yes, i think..."

"Do you think?"

"No, I'm sure."

"So, say that. Word by word."

"Being a man is something humiliating for me."

"Why?"

"Because I want to... I mean, because I have to... because I am a girl!"

Alex couldn't believe he was saying that. What the hell Park Hara was doing to him?

"Good" she said. "So, from now on, we'll 'pretend' you've never been a man. Is that what you want, right? We'll pretend you were a tomboy and you are now finding your femininity. And I'm very happy to help you, 'girl'..."

END OF PART 16





#### PART 17

With the days go by, Alex's hair grew, and Park Hara decided it was time for them to go to a beauty salon. When they arrived at the place, Alex was so nervous that he let the girl take care of everything. She explained to the women of the salon that Alex was a tomboy who was finally finding her femininity. Feeling humiliated and frightened, Alex just smiled and nodded. He thought he might die if anyone found out the truth.

Taking advantage of the insecurity of the guy, Park Hara said that he wanted a full service. So, his whole body was waxed (except his private parts, thankfully!), he got a facial, pedicure and manicure (long extensions were attached to his nails) and a feminine haircut.

When all was practically finished, an idea crossed the mind of Park Hara. She then whispered something to the hairdresser, who smiled cheerfully.

"That's a great idea!" she said. "Come with me, sweetie!"

"What are you going to do?" Alex asked, anxious.

"Just trust me. You want to look pretty, right?"

No, Alex didn't want it. He had no choice, though.

Then, without his knowing about what was happening, all his "facial hair" were permanently removed by electrolysis. Not only that - his eyebrows were also permanently shaped into extremely thin and feminine arches.

Alex's masculinity was being wrested from him in a breakneck speed...

END OF PART 17



PART 18

That night, Park Hara decided to kill once and for all the already weakened male ego of Alex. She then said that they would go out together.

Alex got excited at first, thinking that they would sleep together that night, since they hadn't had sex for many weeks. However, he couldn't be more wrong...

The guy was forced to dress an extremely sexy and feminine outfit, composed by a black thong and a matching bra, a blouse, a mini skirt, stockings and even high heels. Park Hara said he wouldn't need to wear a corset that night.

When he looked at the mirror, he couldn't believe in his eyes. All he could see was a sexy girl. No one could believe that this beauty was a guy. He was in shock.

Even without the corset, he saw that he already had a perfect female figure, his face was completely feminine with his new haircut and the plucked eyebrows, and his legs were looking amazing with the stockings and high heels.

Obviously, there were some things that Alex didn't know, like the fact that all his facial hair had been permanently removed by electrolysis (Park Hara told him that his beard and his eyebrows would grow back in a few months) and the fact that the weight loss pills he was taking for so long were actually powerful female hormones.

"Ready to go, cutie?" Park Hara asked.

"I can't go out like that!" Alex said freaking out.

"I know you're a little scared, honey. After all, this is the first time that you will show your "true self" to the world. But don't worry. You will get used to it. In fact, I think you will soon begin to love being admired and coveted by all around!"

"Covered by all?! But..." Alex said feeling sick.

"That's enough, silly girl! Let's move!"

"But... but... I can't walk with those heels!" he said desperately.

"Just walk like you have been training. You will see that this is not so hard. Plus, the heels will make your walk even sexier. I'm sure the guys will love seeing your hips swaying from side to side..."

END OF PART 18



## PART 19

"Where are we going?" Alex asked while they were waiting for a taxi.

"It's surprise, sweetheart" Park Hara said. "But I'm sure that you'll like it."

No, Alex wasn't liking anything of what was going on. He had never felt so exposed in his entire life. There he was, all dolled, wearing a mini skirt and high heels on the street!

When a taxi finally showed up, Park Hara whispered something to the driver and Alex couldn't figure out which was their destination.

He was so nervous that he didn't realize that the vehicle was traveling over an area he knew well - very, very well. When the vehicle stopped and Alex realized where they were, his jaw dropped.

"What the hell are you doing here?" he asked with wide eyes.

"We're here to have fun. That's our 'girls night out', remember? Now relax and come with me" she said dragging Alex out of the car.

The feminized guy was so desperate because they were at the entrance of a nightclub that was very familiar to him - the same nightclub where he and his band used to play pretty often.

"Please, Park Hara, let's get out of here!" he begged.

"Once again, sweetie, you need to relax!"

"Why are you doing this to me?"

"Because I want to show you that the old Alex is dead. Even here, in a place where everyone knew that 'tomboy' you used to be, nobody will be able to recognize you. You have nothing to fear."

Alex wasn't so sure. He thought about running away, but that would be impossible with those damn high heels. In addition, he was shaking uncontrollably from head to toe. So, he just allowed Park Hara to lead him to the entrance hall.

At the place, next to a mirrored wall, there were some posters in real scale of some bands that used to play at the nightclub. Alex soon found a poster of him, and he was even more shocked. He could see the 'two versions' of him side to side and he concluded that Park Hara was right. The old Alex was dead. He had been turned into a hot chick, and he felt even more emasculated. His eyes filled with tears as they entered the noisy main hall of the nightclub...

END OF PART 19



## PART 20

The night was a nightmare for Alex. Despite his feminine appearance, he was the whole time afraid that someone might recognize him. His heart almost stopped when an old acquaintance approached and asked, "Do I know you from somewhere?"

Fortunately, the feminized man soon realized that the other guy was just trying to start a conversation because he was into Alex. Obviously, he wasn't the only one. The beauty of that 'new girl' attracted the attention of a lot of men, and Alex had to struggle to contain the advances of the guys.

It was particularly difficult because Park Hara was 'too friendly' that night. She talked and danced with many men, leaving Alex alone a lot of times. He was also forced to talk to some guys, and he even had to dance a few times since he was running out of excuses.

During the dances, the men took the opportunity to rub his body, and some of them even tried to kiss the feminized guy. Alex was perplexed. The men were trying to kiss him. The men!

Another thing that made Alex devastated was the fact that his old band was playing that night, and the guys had found a new singer! Alex was forced to admit that the guy was good. Apparently, no one was missing him...

At the end of the night, Park Hara invited Alex to go to her apartment and his mood improved somewhat. After so much humiliation, he really deserved to have some fun.

When they entered the room of the girl, she told Alex to close his eyes and began to undress him. "Oh, that's good!" he thought.

However, he soon realized that Park Hara was dressing him with a new outfit. The material was soft and silky... When he opened his eyes, he saw that he was wearing a sexy nightie. What was Park Hara planning?

END OF PART 20

-----



PART 21

If Alex thought he would have a crazy night of sex ahead, he couldn't be more wrong. All that Park Hara wanted was a girly sleepover. She spread a green cream by Alex's face, saying that his skin would be marvelous in the morning. She then took out some wigs so they could try out new styles.

"Oh, it will be so fun!" she said, clapping hands.

Alex just couldn't react. There he was, alone with a half-naked hot girl, but he wasn't feeling man enough to try something, since Park Hara had shown no interest in him 'this way'. His male ego was destroyed and he knew it would be hard to recover it.

They experienced many wigs, and Park Hara forced him to parade around the room like a fairy several times. Later, she taught Alex to do some hairstyles in her natural hair.

Obviously, she also decided to try on some outfits, especially underwears and nightclothes.

"Do you think I look okay?" she asked, dressing a sexy set of lingerie.

"You look great!" Alex said.

"Don't lie to me, 'girl'? Do you think that a 'man' would like to see me in it?"

Yes, she knew how to humiliate Alex even more.

After that, they watched a girly movie, and decided to sleep.

"Do you mind if I take off my bra? I don't like to sleep with one."

And so she did. Even in front of those wonderful boobs, Alex's dick didn't react. What the hell was wrong with him?

In addition, Park Hara wasn't showing any embarrassment. She was acting like she was in the presence of another girl all the time. A 'harmless girl'.

Park Hara fell asleep quickly, and Alex cried for the second time that night. He could still feel the tears wetting his face after a long time when he finally managed to fall asleep too...

END OF PART 21



## PART 22

Park Hara wasn't completely satisfied with the way that Alex was walking in high heels, so she decided he should practice it a little more.

"From now on" she began, "you will wear high heels all the time until you master it, understood?"

"But..."

"Shhh... you complain too much, girl! Remember that I'm doing all this to help you! You don't want to be mistaken for a boy or something, right?"

"Y-yes" Alex stammered, burning with humiliation.

He was then forced to walk in high heels for hours. His feet were killing him, but Park Hara wasn't satisfied yet.

"Something is still missing." she said.

"What you mean?" Alex asked concerned.

"I think this is a matter of attitude, Alex. You're a pretty girl, you know... You should be proud about it. But instead you always look apprehensive and scared. You must be proud of your femininity. You are a girl with potential to attract the male attention and you know that. You have to relax and start to enjoy it."

"Hmm... Park Hara... I... I think that I don't like men... I think I am a lesbian..." Alex said, trying to use that crazy game of Park Hara in his favor.

"Oh, really? Let's see that."

She approached Alex, who flinched, startled. It was amazing how she had become an intimidating figure for the poor guy.

"Do you think that I am pretty, Alex?" she asked.

"O-of course!"

"If so, kiss me!"

"What?"

"Kiss me now!"

Alex tried, but for some reason... something he couldn't explain, he just couldn't do that. He desired her, sure, but he just couldn't act as before. In other words, he could no longer act like that man he used to be.

"I can't Park Hara! I'm sorry!" he said with tears in his eyes. Why the hell he was crying so much lately?

"That's okay, sweetie. You don't need to be sorry. Now we can forget this nonsense about being a lesbian, right? It's clear that you like men, Alex. Just like me..."

END OF PART 22



## PART 23

"Oh, Alex, your cleavage looks great! Not to mention your crotch, which is much more smooth and elegant now. Very girly!"

Park Hara wasn't satisfied with what she had called "hormonal problem" of Alex. So she used a bit of the oriental technology to help him to feel more comfortable in his body.

First, she injected a saline solution in Alex breasts so they could become a little bigger. She assured him that his body would absorb the solution, so when his real breasts grow up he would have no problem. Alex didn't understand that. What she meant by real breasts? She was probably just messing with his head again...

Next, she ordered Alex to take his panties off and then tied his legs. He was worried. What could she be planning?

"All done!" she said after some minutes. "It wasn't hard, right? Take a look!"

She handed a mirror to Alex. When he looked to the middle of his legs, he almost fainted. His cock had gone! All he could see was a pussy! A perfect and realist pussy!

"W-what have you done, Park Hara?"

"Nothing much!" she said smiling. "I just glued a fake pussy over your real one because I know you was ashamed of how it looked... And don't worry! It's fully functional and you can keep it for weeks! This will give us time to find a doctor to fix it all!"

Fix it all?! Was she talking about a surgery to give him a real pussy? Alex would never let that happen! But before he could say anything, she handed him a sexy outfit saying they needed to go out to buy new clothes for Alex.

"Oh, and I also put a little surprise in his bag. Something you will need to use to dilate your new vagina for a while."

When Alex opened the bag, he was shocked by what he saw...

END OF PART 23



PART 24

That night, when Alex was finally alone, he decided to examine his "new body". At first, he was reluctant to face his "new attributes", but he knew he had no choice, and the sooner he did that the better.

He undressed slowly, keeping only the lingerie. Then, he approached the mirror. With each step, he could feel the weight of his "boobs", which swayed at the slightest movement. Also, he felt a strange emptiness between his legs. It was so, so weird...

Alex thought he would feel revulsion at the sight of his reflection, but actually... it was very hard to believe that this girl in the mirror was in fact him. It was as if he were staring at someone else - a very hot girl. Unlike Park Hara, this girl wasn't intimidating him, so Alex started to get aroused.

It was a different arousal, since his cock was stuck somewhere. He felt a weird tingling between his legs and on his boobs. It was a new sensation, but Alex couldn't say that it was a bad thing.

He then took off his bra... Oh, the boobs of "that girl" were so perfect... not too big nor too small, just as Alex liked. He massaged the boobs and felt a wave of pleasure through his body while his nipples became hard. He then took off his panties...

The pussy was so realistic that Alex once again couldn't believe he was that person. Slowly, he put a finger into the crack. It was warm and wet inside, and "the girl" groaned. Alex then remembered the dildo that Park Hara had given him. He wondered if he should pick up that thing... he was aroused and scared at the same time... Would he go that far?

END OF PART 24



## PART 25

"Okay, Alex" Park Hara said the next morning. "Today, we'll try to improve some of your mannerisms. Korean girls behave differently than you, 'American girls'. So we'll try to change it a bit to make you feel more at ease in our country."

Alex realized that Park Hara really was treating him as he had always been an 'American girl', and it was driving him crazy. Was that really necessary? Most likely. After all, he would have to live as a girl for an entire year. Still, it was so difficult and humiliating...

"We have something called "aegyo" which could be translated as "cute". However, this isn't just an act or something. For some of us, this is a lifestyle. First, your voice is already good, but you need to raise it to a 'higher than normal' pitch. Not three octaves or so. Just enough to sound cute. Try it. Ask me to give you this cup... in Korean."

"Could you give me that cup?" Alex said in Korean with his voice even higher, feeling like a idiot.

"Good, but you can do it better. Do you think that's how a cute Korean girl talk? You need to try harder, Alex!"

"Ooooooh, Park Hara, could you give me that cup, pleeeeeease?" he said pouting at the end.

"Much better, 'girl'! Now, remember to always use your hands when you speak... In fact, you will no longer speak even a word without using your hands! From now on, they are like extensions of your mouth. Always make cute gestures. Wave, clap your hands, and cover your face when you laugh or feel embarrassed. This is super cute! And remember to use your eyes too! You need to wink and blink excessively, but not 'too' excessively. Once again, just enough to look cute."

In the following hours, Alex was forced to train it exhaustively. At the end, Park Hara also forced him to pose for photos doing "his aegyo". He was completely sick...

END OF PART 25

-----



PART 26

The next day, Park Hara decided it was time for Alex to begin dancing with the girls. He really needed to start getting used to the K-pop dance routines, since he would be a member (and the lead singer) of a K-pop group.

Alex really didn't like it. He knew very well (since he had watched countless K-pop clips and presentations on youtube) that those dance routines were extremely cute and sexy. This would be a giant step towards the womanhood.

As that would be the first dance training of Alex, Park Hara allowed him to wear comfortable clothes and sneakers, but she warned him that it was something temporary. He had to learn to dance in sky-high heels, because that would be necessary in the presentations of the group.

Park Hara said that day they would train the choreography of "bo beep bo beep" by T-ara. Alex froze at that. He knew that choreography. It was... extremely girly, and so sexy... The girls in their presentations even wore ears, paws and tails of cat while they were dancing around.

"Okay, Alex" Park Hara said. "Let's start with the basics. Just try to follow my lead. Five, six, seven, eight..."

She began to dance, but Alex had a hard time following the steps.

'You're doing it wrong, silly girl! You need to loosen up your waistline. Don't be afraid to move your hips! And remember our 'aegyo' training from yesterday. You need to look cute. You want to look cute! You're cute! Right?"

"Y-yes?"

"It doesn't look cute!"

"Ooooh, Park Hara, I'm the cutest girl in the whooole world, yay!" Alex cried with extremely high-pitched voice as he blew a kiss and raised his butt.

"That's better. Let's try again, and remember to smile all the time! You have to look happy, because you're happy! Nothing makes you happier than showing your cuteness to everyone!"

"I want to die" Alex thought sometime later, though he continued with a smile frozen on his face. He was slowly beginning to learn the choreography, and I knew that a guy shouldn't be dancing like that. Not only that, but he also had to sing the song, which basically told the story of a girl who was hurt because her boyfriend was ignoring her. "I'm the biggest sissy that exists!"

And he just couldn't see any light at the end of the tunnel...

PS: Here you can see T-ara performing "bo beep bo beep": [T-ara](#)

And here is a dance tutorial of the song, so you can learn it too: [Dance tutorial](#)

And don't forget to upload your dance and send me the link! Lol!

END OF PART 26



## PART 27

The next day, Park Hara decided to try something a little sexier. She then told Alex that they would dance "Bubble Pop!" by Hyuna. He sighed again, knowing he would have another humiliating day ahead. Hyuna was so hot, and she knew how to move her hips and raise her butt...

"And you'll have to wear high heels today, of course." Park Hara said.

"What?" Alex said shocked. "So soon?"

"The sooner the better. And you just can't dance this song without heels. Now how about you tell me how much you are excited about all it?"

"Ooooh, Park Hara, that's is soooo fantastic!" Alex said clapping and smiling, although in reality he was very upset. "I love this song, like, soooo much!"

"And what you think about Hyuna?"

"She's soooo perfect! I mean, she knows how to be sexy without being vulgar, right? I would looove to be her!"

"Well, you'll be. At least today!" Park Hara said laughing.

It wasn't easy. Alex was already used to walking in high heels, but dancing was something completely different. He fell many times and almost broke his ankle twice.

"C'mon, Alex! You can do better than it!"

"I'm trying!" Alex said almost crying. He couldn't understand why he was so emotional lately.

They continued dancing for hours. Alex had already realized that Park Hara wouldn't allow him to stop until he performed that choreography perfectly, as a authentic K-pop idol.

"That's better, girl!" Park Hara said when Alex began to get the hang of that. "Yeah, very sexy! But don't forget to move your hips and smile. Oh, you love that, right? You are looking forward to all the attention you will get! I know that, silly girl! Stop lying to yourself and accept it! Look at the mirror. Do you see that sexy and cute girl dancing? That's you, Alex!"

Despite all the humiliation, Alex felt very aroused seeing the reflection of that girl in the mirror that was in front of him. She was so pretty and sexy... He just couldn't understand how he could be that girl...

END OF PART 27



#### ART 28

A few days later, Park Hara decided it was time for Alex to go out as a girl again, this time during the day. The experience at the nightclub had been interesting, but passing as a girl during the day would be an even bigger challenge for Alex. In addition, she had another surprise for him...

After dressing him with a girly outfit, she put something into his ears, and then she buttoned another thing that looked like a brooch on her own blouse.

"Ooooh, what is this, Park Hara?" Alex said distressed. "I can't hear well!"

The stereo was turned on, since they, as usual, were listening to K-pop, but suddenly all that Alex could hear were some incomprehensible noises.

"How about now?" Park Hara asked. "Can you hear me well?"

"Yes, I can hear you well, but just you!" Alex said pouting and crossing his arms at his chest. Park Hara smiled. Without even realizing it, Alex was beginning to act like a girly Korean girl all the time.

"That's what I wanted, silly!" she said. "I put in your ears some portable earphones which are connected to this little microphone on my blouse. Also, I used a special glue to stick caps in your ear,

so you will only hear well what I say. Don't worry, this glue doesn't offer any risk to your health, and caps will fall in a week or so..."

"Why did you do that?" Alex asked in shock.

"Because from now on I will speak to you only in Korean, and since you can't hear anyone, your Korean will improve quickly."

"That's not fair, Park Hara! I ..." he stopped talking when he realized she was ignoring him. "Why aren't you looking at me? I'm talking!" he then had an idea. "Will you talk to me now?" he asked in his broken Korean.

"Very good, Alex!" Park Hara said in Korean too. "As you noticed, I'm just going to answer you when you speak my language! Isn't that great? Now let's go out! I'm sure we'll have fun"

END OF PART 28

-----



## PART 29

Park Hara took Alex to a mall in a nearby town. On the place, she told everyone that Alex was an American girl who had been raised in South Korea because her parents had gone to work there when she was just a little girl, and she didn't speak English very well.

Alex didn't like any of it. However, there was nothing he could do. Thanks to those damn things that Park Hara had put in his ears, he was unable to understand what other people were saying, making

that story created by Park Hara even more believable. He was feeling like a foreigner in his own country! He could only communicate with Park Hara, who had said that he could only speak Korean.

In addition, Alex was very afraid of being discovered. At each new interaction he thought anyone would find that he was actually a guy. That didn't happen, thankfully, but this fear made Alex behave even more as a foreigner - someone very uncomfortable in that "unfamiliar place".

They shopped at many stores, and at the end Park Hara took Alex to a beauty salon. His hair was still growing and she decided that he needed a new look. She whispered something to the hairdresser and Alex couldn't hear what she said. He was completely at the mercy of those women.

At the end, he saw that his hair had been darkened a bit and it was even more girly. Alex just couldn't recognize himself in the mirror. At every day his true self was being wrested from him more and more...

END OF PART 29



PART 30

The next day, after get dressed, Alex said to Park Hara that they needed to talk.

"What's wrong, Alex?" she asked.

"Well..." Alex started reluctantly. He was biting his lip and staring at the floor like any other Korean girl would do when embarrassed.

"C'mon, girl! We don't have all day!" Park Hara rushed him.

"I'm having trouble using the toilet, Park Hara!" Alex cried.

"What you mean?"

"I'm having a hard time urinating" he said covering his face with his hands in shame. Alex's behavior was better than Park Hara might have dreamed. Who would believe that this "girly girl" was in fact a guy?

"Tell me something, Alex" she started. "Are you using the dildo to dilate your 'temporary' vagina as I ordered?"

"I... I..." Alex stammered. The truth was that he hadn't done that. He thought it would be too humiliating to insert a dildo in his body, even if 'his vagina' was fake.

"Answer my question, Alex!"

"I... I didn't do it, Park Hara. I'm sorry. I just couldn't."

"You're such a dumb girl, aren't you? If you don't do this, 'your vagina' will close and I'll have to get you to a hospital. Do you want that?"

Alex shivered at the thought. This could be even more embarrassing.

"No, Park Hara."

"Good. So be a good girl and do what you have to do, okay? Besides, I don't know why you're so afraid about that. I'm sure you will 'love' it!"

END OF PART 30



## PART 31

Alex knew there was only one way for him to have the courage to do what needed to be done: he would have to get drunk. So, that night he went to his bedroom carrying a bottle of whiskey.

He hadn't drank alcohol for a considerable time, so he soon began to get dizzy. A little more relaxed, he approached the full-length mirror. 'That girl' was so perfect... he started to get aroused. Again, he couldn't believe he had been turned into such a sexy girl. Then he had an idea. Maybe that was the right way to handle the situation. He had to pretend that 'this girl' was someone else, not him. Like if he was just watching a video or something. He had already felt it before, but this time he had to do it intentionally. This was a crazy idea, of course, but he was drunk enough to take this plan forward.

"Show me what you can do!" he said, as if he were talking to 'the girl'. He concluded that this story would be more believable if 'the girl' had a name, so he decided to call her Kim Hana, a Korean name that he really loved and thought that could only belong to a hot girl.

"C'mon, Kim Hana, dance for me!" he said.

'Kim Hana' began to dance "Miniskirt" by AOA, a very sexy song. It was as if Alex no longer had control of his body. He was just a looker, enjoying the movements of that hot chick. She danced

sensually and slowly began to take off her nightie. Oh, Alex almost went crazy! Kim Hana started moaning, showing that she was very excited too.

Then, she approached the closet and grabbed a box that was hidden in the background for some days...

END OF PART 31



PART 32

'Kim Hana' opened the box and took out the object that was inside. It was a large dildo. She then approached the mirror again and Alex felt a shiver of pleasure to see her holding it.

"Go ahead, Kim Hana" he thought. "You know what you have to do."

She took the vibrator to her mouth and for a moment Alex almost lost his nerve. It was hard to fantasize that it was someone else who was sucking it when he could feel the object in his mouth. But then he focused in the mirror again, trying to believe that 'this girl' was sucking 'his dick'. That was it. This wasn't a dildo, but in fact his dick. He 'had' to believe that. That was the only way to make it work out.

'Kim Hana' took off her lingerie and began to suck the dildo deeply as she stroked her boobs with her other hand. Her knees trembled because she was so horny... She then felt a warmth in her pussy, which became completely soaked. That pussy was so realistic...

She put a finger down there and soon another one. Wow, It was so good. Alex was delighted too. He had never seen such a hot scene in his life - and this would get even better...

When 'Kim Hana' put the vibrator in her pussy she felt a shock of pleasure that almost made her lose consciousness. When she realized it, she was lying on the floor in front of the mirror. She then began to shove the dildo faster and faster inside her, as she moaned and screamed.

"Oh yes!" she cried. "Fuck me, Alex! Fuck me like the little slut that I am!"

She soon had her first orgasm, and it was better than she could imagine. She continued lying on the floor for a long time, feeling completely satisfied and relaxed.

Another person was very pleased with all that too. Alex didn't know, but Park Hara had put on a small camera in his bedroom, and she had seen everything that had happened.

"Well," she thought smiling. "It seems that Kim Hana has just been born."

END OF PART 32



### PART 33

"So, Alex" Park Hara said the next day before they started dancing. "Did you do what I told you to do?"

"Y-yes" he replied embarrassed, knowing quite well what she was talking about.

"Very good, girl! And the issue was solved?"

"Kind of..."

"What you mean?"

"It was a little easier to urinate this morning, but it's still not as simple as before."

"I see... I think I know what we can do about it" she left the place for a moment and returned shortly after with a small box in her hands. "Since you took forever to begin to dilate your vagina, we'll have to do something a little more extreme to recover the lost time. In this box you will find another dildo. This one is small, so you'll be able to do everything with it inside you. For a few days, this dildo will have to stay in your vagina all the time, Kim Hana."

Alex was so shocked to hear about the dildo that he took a while to assimilate what Park Hara had said last. But slowly he realized it...

"Wait a minute" he said. "What did you call me what?"

"Excuse me?"

"The name! What name did you say?"

"Hmm... Kim Hana, I think..."

"Where did you hear that name?" Alex asked with his heart racing. For a few days Park Hara was sleeping in a bedroom next to his. Was it possible she had heard what had happened the night before?

"I don't know for sure..." she said with an enigmatic smile. "But I think this name really suits you, don't you agree?"

Alex felt sure she had heard everything and he wanted to disappear. Why this was happening? That situation could only be a nightmare.

Surely he would be even more shocked if he found out that Park Hara had not only heard, but had also seen what he had done. However, the girl chose to keep that information to herself.

"So, are you think?" she asked again.

"I... I think you're right" Alex said not knowing what to do. "That's a lovely name!"

"Good, Kim Hana! So now go put your 'new friend' inside you."

"B-but I really have to keep it all the time?"

"It's not like if you're going to hate it, right?" she said with a wink.

END OF PART 33

-----



#### PART 34

That night, while Alex was getting ready to go to the bed, he remembered everything that had happened that day. He remembered especially that moment when Park Hara had forced him to put that dildo inside him.

After he did that, he returned to the presence of the girl, completely humiliated.

"So, how are you feeling?" she asked.

"Not so good" he said. "This is quite uncomfortable, you know..."

"Well, I have an idea to make this experience more comfortable for you."

She then took out a small remote control and pressed a button. Immediately, Alex felt the dildo vibrating inside his fake pussy.

"W-what are you doing, Park Hara?" Alex asked twitching.

"I'm just helping you, sweetie."

"Turn it off now!" Alex said starting to moan.

"C'mon, Kim Hana! I know you're enjoying it! I can see it in your face! Now let's start dancing!"

"How can I dance with that vibrating inside me?" Alex asked his legs wobbly.

"You'll get used to it. In fact, I think it will be very useful. Today we're going to dance 'Touch my Body' by Sistar, and I'm sure you will be able to interpret this song very well with that... extra incentive, so to speak."

Alex felt a chill. He also knew 'Touch My Body', and it was bad. He wondered if Park Hara was choosing that kind of songs just to humiliate him. A 'real man' could never sing and dance something like that. That was a pinnacle of femininity and he knew it very well.

He then began learning the choreography while being forced to sing the lyrics:

"Touch my body, body  
Touch my body, body  
Touch my body, body  
Touch my body"

The choreography requires him to move around a lot, and he could feel the vibration of the dildo even more intensely.

"I know you want it, come to my side  
I prepared wine and sweet chocolate  
My pool gets soft and sometimes warm just for you  
na na na na na"

Alex continued singing and dancing in front of the large mirror of the studio, and once again he fantasized that he was seeing someone else. Kim Hana was another person, and she was singing and dancing for Alex. Yes, that was a good thought.

"I see myself in your reddened eyes  
You drive, I'll put my hands up to the sky  
Yeh baby dancing with me you're my star"

'Kim Hana' felt spasms of pleasure. She was so horny. Her pussy was so wet...

"Touch my body, we'll go faster, little by little  
Oh everybody, higher than the blue sky  
I like this rhythm, you and I under the hot sun  
My body body Touch ma body  
Baby so good I feel like paradise right now  
Baby so nice, our own summer night  
Little by little, one step two step, you and I under the moonlight  
My body body Touch my body"

"Congratulations, Kim Hana!" Park Hara said at the end of the dance. "I think that was the best performance of this song ever! You're becoming an amazing dancer!"

'Kim Hana' murmured a thanks as she tried to control her breathing. If that had continued for only a few minutes she could have had an orgasm there, in front of Park Hara.

That night, Alex remembered all this while he admired the body of 'Kim Hana' at the mirror. But he needed more. He felt extremely excited when 'she' picked up the large dildo again. That would be another fantastic night...

END OF PART 34



PART 35.1

The scheduled day to go to South Korea was approaching and Park Hara decided that Alex needed to go out as a girl one last time before the trip, and she wanted to ensure that this would be an even more remarkable experience for the feminized guy.

After dressing him with a really, really sexy outfit, she said they were going to another nightclub.

"Tonight will be about a specific issue, 'Kim Hana': men."

"B-but, Park Hara, I don't like men!" Alex cried.

"We have already talked about it, silly girl, remember? The truth is that you don't like women! I offered myself to you that night and you were unable to do anything. So, it's pretty clear that you aren't a lesbian. I understand that you get a little insecure around men because you were a 'tomboy' for a long time, but you need to overcome this issue. I won't force you into anything. We'll start it slowly. But you have to understand that you're a desirable sexy girl and you should be proud about it. Very soon we'll be K-pop idols and you'll have to deal with a lot of male attention, so you need to get used to it."

Alex shivered at that. It was really about to happen. He would be a K-pop idol! He already knew that for a long time, sure, but for some reason this fact struck him in full at that time. He felt an uncontrollable despair. Why had he allowed it to go that far? He thought about giving up, but he knew it was too late for that. However, he needed to start imposing his will on some matters. He didn't want any involvement with men, and he needed to make this clear to Park Hara. This wouldn't be simple, though. For some reason he was more and more submissive, completely at the mercy of the Asian girl. Why couldn't he react? Things were really tricky for him...

END OF PART 35.1



## PART 35.2

Park Hara took him to a nightclub where he had never been before, which was a relief. At least the chances of him finding someone he knew were smaller.

"As if anyone could recognize me" he thought looking at his reflection in the mirrored wall of the entrance of the place. When they entered the nightclub, Alex saw that a lot of guys stopped talking to just after the 'two new girls' who had appeared. He felt his legs shaking as he walked down the place on top of the high-heeled boots moving his hips.

Park Hara took him to the bar, and ordered two margaritas. Before they could pay, two handsome guys who were there said they would take care of it.

"Thank you" Park Hara said smiling.

"You're welcome" one of the guys said. He had short hair and black eyes.

"Hey, babe" the other guy said to Alex. He was blonde, had green eyes and brawny arms.

"No English" Alex said with a broken English as Park Hara had instructed him to do. He didn't have to pretend he wasn't understanding what the guy was saying, since he was still using that damned device that Park Hara Hara had put in his ears. "Sorry."

"That's okay, babe. So, aren't you American?"

Park Hara explained that 'Kim Hana' was born in America, but her mother was Korean and she had been raised in Asia.

"Oh, that's nice! My name is Mark, anyway. M-A-R-K."

Knowing that the guy was expecting it, Alex repeated his name letter by letter, as if he were unable to speak his own language.

"Oh, you look very pretty saying my name. YOU... LOOK... PRETTY! Here's your drink" he said handing the glass to Alex and involving the thin waist of the feminized guy with his muscular arm.

"Thank you!"

Mark continued this game to teach Alex to say a few words in English while Park Hara was talking to the other guy. This was working very well. As Alex's hearing was seriously impaired, the other guy had to say the words loudly and slowly, making the act believable.

Completely helpless, Alex just behaved like a cute and shy girl. He repeated the words that Mark taught him, smiled a lot, and pouted and flickered sometimes. He couldn't realize this, but the way he was acting was very sexy and flirty. Mark understood that as a green light and began rubbing the feminine leg of Alex with one of his big hands.

"Oh my god! What I'm going to do now? How am I going to get out of this situation?" Alex thought desperate, though he kept smiling.

END OF PART 35.2



PART 35.3

Alex continued talking to Mark and he was having increasing difficulties to contain the advances of the other guy. When Alex discreetly took away Mark's hand from his leg, the guy started to caress his slender arms, then his waist and finally his pretty face.

Realizing what was happening, Park Hara took a moment of distraction of the guy with whom she was talking to whisper something to Alex through the microphone on her dress which was connected to the device in Alex's ear.

"Kim Hana, you need to stop doing that" she said. "We are here to teach you to be more comfortable with male attention, so you need to stop avoiding this man. He looks like a nice guy, and he's just being kind. Also, he's very hot! So, just act like the girl you are!"

Alex was shocked by that, but he was obviously unable to answer. So, when Marx started rubbing his leg again, he just smiled shyly at the guy.

"Very good, Kim Hana!" Park Hara continued. "Now begins to flirt with him. You must learn how to flirt with guys, since this is an important weapon for us girls."

"What?" Alex exclaimed in Korean, astonished.

"There is something wrong, babe?" Mark asked.

"No... I... I... Your arms... so strong... I... I like your arms..." he said in a broken English.

"Oh, really?" Mark said smiling. "You can touch them if you want. T-O-U-C-H! Go ahead!" he completed extending one of his arms.

Alex touched Mark's arm and felt even more emasculated. It was so brawny... while Alex's arms were so thin and delicate... Still, he couldn't help but he thought that those small and manicured hands touching that muscular arm was a very hot scene.

"What the hell am I thinking?" he wondered desperate. Then, he realized that Mark was about to kiss him. He needed to do something.

"Want... Dance?" he asked pouting. That was the first idea that crossed his mind to gain some time.

"Sure!" Mark said dragging him to the dance floor.

Alex soon realized that this was a stupid idea. He could have just said he needed to go to the bathroom! But it was too late for that...

The DJ was playing a fast-paced remix of a pop music and Mark immediately grabbed Alex's waist making the two practically glued.

Their mouths were dangerously close and Alex tried to back away a bit. However, it was impossible because Mark was holding him really tight. Then, following the rhythm of the music, Alex tried to turn a little. It was even worse, because he ended turning around completely, and Mark grabbed him from behind.

He could feel the man's erection rubbing his ass and there was nothing he could do to avoid this. It was so degrading... so disgusting...

"You are a great dancer!" Mark said close to the ear of Alex making him feel a chill.

However, Alex couldn't hear it very well because of the device in his ear and also because the music was too loud.

"What?" he asked turning back instinctively.

However, instead of repeating what he had said earlier, Mark took the opportunity to kiss Alex deeply. The feminized guy was caught off guard and had no time to react...

END OF PART 35.3

-----



## PART 36

The next day, Alex was alone for the first time in a long time. Park Hara had told him the night before that she and the other girls would have to go out to settle the last details of the trip, so he could take the day to do whatever he wanted.

Alex thought that was a good news, but he just didn't know what to do. He had grown accustomed to just obey thanks that hard training taught by Hark Hara. So, he was a little lost. He started to feel anxious and to pass the time while he was thinking about something to do he began to get dolled up. It really helped him to be distracted.

In addition to the boredom, the truth was that Alex had another problem, but he was trying to avoid thinking about it at all costs...

He had been kissed by another man.

This memory hit him squarely as he was putting the pink lipstick on his kissable lips - the same lips that had been attacked with lust by that guy called Mark. How Alex had let it go that far? Some time ago, he was a manly guy, he had a rock band and a lot of girls crazy for him. Now, for all purposes, he was a girl!

There he was, wearing a feminine blouse, a cute skirt, high heels, and putting makeup on his face. And he had been kissed by a man! This thought haunted him again.

He felt so humiliated, so helpless... he had become just a prey. A girl for whom men felt attracted. And this situation would be even worse. In two days he would travel to South Korea, where he would be a idol. That really would be a challenging year...

END OF PART 36



PART 37.1

After long hours of flight, Alex, Park Hara and the other girls finally arrived in South Korea. Alex was exhausted. He had never faced such a long trip. Knowing that the path would be tiring, Park Hara had given him some comfy clothes, but even so he was very tired.

It was over, at least, but Alex wasn't sure if this was a good or bad thing. It was actually happening. He was in Asia, and would stay there for a whole year, living as a girl - not a normal girl, but probably a famous one. In addition, Alex would have a nasty surprise very soon...

After collecting their luggage, they went to the Customs. Park Hara and the other girls had no problem with their documents, obviously, but Alex wasn't so lucky.

"There is a issue with your passport, Miss" said a middle-aged officer.

"W-what you mean?" Alex asked nervous.

"Your passport says that you're a male person. You'll have to follow me."

Alex froze. He was about to be unmasked, and he knew this would be the most embarrassing moment of his life. There he was, wearing the girliest outfit in the world, with his body feminized, whereas in fact he was a man. He looked anxiously at Park Hara, who had heard everything, looking for help.

"What am I going to do?" he whispered desperately.

Park Hara was angry with herself. She had asked a friend to change the photo in Alex's passport, but she had completely forgotten that 'other detail'.

"You can solve this issue, gir!" she said trying to make Alex confident.

"How?"

"Did you forget about your training? You know very well how a girl like you can get what she wants."

Alex understood what she meant, but he wasn't sure if it would work. However, he had no time to say anything else because the grumpy official was already rushing him...

END OF PART 37.1



## PART 37.2

Alex followed the official to an empty room. His was extremely nervous, and he felt an urge to run as far as possible. However, he knew that would be impossible, since his legs were trembling so much.

"Please, sit down, Miss" the man said politely, but without showing the least bit of sympathy. Alex sat on the hard chair, crossing his legs gracefully. The chair didn't have any ornament, as well as the entire room. The place was quite cold and impersonal.

"Now I would like to know what's going on here" the man said gravely.

Alex took off his sunglasses and immediately his beautiful eyes filled with tears and his kissable lips began to tremble. He was scared enough to cry for real, but he was also acting a little. He had understood very well what Park Hara had advised him to do, and he was doing exactly that.

"I... I don't know, sir" he said with a sweet and weak voice.

Oh, even the most hardy of men could falter facing that voice, and that officer wasn't immune to it

"You don't need to cry, Miss" he said outlining a smile for the first time. "Would you like some water or something else?"

"N-no, sir, thank you. I'm just sooo frightened. I mean, I'm just a docile and fragile girl, and you are so manly and strong."

"I d-didn't want to scare you" the official stuttered, a little embarrassed. Still, he had loved to be called manly and strong by that desirable girl. This really stroked his ego. "I just need to know why your passport says you're a male person."

"How could I know?" Alex said with an exaggerated sigh. "Sometimes I am a little dizzy, sir, and I don't understand things like that. Someone probably made a mistake... Do you think I look like a man?" he asked pouting and winking.

"Of course not! Never in a million years I would think that a girl like you were a man!"

Alex felt relieved, but also a little humiliated by that so sincere statement. Would he be able to look like a man again? He decided to think about that later. He had more urgent things to solve.

"Sooo" he said, but it could very well have been the mewling of a kitten. "What are we going to do?"

"Tell me something, Miss. Do you plan to stay in Korea for long?"

"Yes. I have some relatives here. Plus, some friends and I have a musical group, and we have a contract with a music label."

"So, will you be one of those girls who sing and dance on TV?"

"Yes!" Alex said pretending he was excited about it. "Isn't that wonderful?"

"Sure! In this case, I'll let you go, but you have to promise me you will go to the embassy of your country to regularize your passport."

"I promise, sir" Alex said with a cute serious expression.

"One last thing..." the man began, but he seemed reluctant to continue. Was he blushing?

"What, sir?"

"Umm... Could you give me an autograph?" this time he was unquestionably blushing. "I mean, you'll be a star and... but if this is a problem..."

"It's not a problem at all, sir!" Alex autographed a piece of paper and, impulsively, he even kissed the cheek of man. "You're my hero!"

Oh, the officer would remember that day for years and years to come. He even became a nicer person after that. "I'm the hero of this hot chick!" he thought proud of himself.

And Alex then realized that a girly girl had a power that he never had imagined. If he had tried to do that as a man, at that time he would probably be being arrested...

END OF PART 37.2



PART 38.1

The music label had previously booked two apartments for 'the girls'. They went there as soon as they finally managed to leave the airport. Park Hara decided that she and Alex would share one of the apartments, while the other girls would be in the other. This way she could continue to help the feminized guy.

Alex wasn't satisfied with that, but still he couldn't worry about anything on the way to the apartment. From the taxi window, he saw the largest concentration of Korean girls he had ever seen. That was quite obvious, since he was in Korea for the first time, but he was unable to think straight. It was like a dream coming true. All that Korean girls... He loved them so much! He just wished he was wearing pants instead of that girly outfit. "They'll just see me as another girl" he thought.

The apartment was small, but very comfortable and nicely located. Alex just didn't like the fact that the place had been decorated in a very girly way, with pink walls, curtains with ruffles, flower vases and paintings with kittens and other girly stuff.

They had time just to unpack the bags and take a shower, and then they had to leave again because they had a meeting with the directors of the label.

Park Hara selected an outfit for Alex dress consisting of a pink blouse, a black mini skirt, stockings and heels.

"Umm... Are you sure this outfit is suitable for this kind of meeting?" Alex asked insecure.

"Of course, Kim Hana! This outfit is perfect! You can't go there dressed as a nun, you know. You're going to be a K-pop idol and these people will want to see your potential, if you know are you mean."

She then let Alex get ready by himself since she also had to get dressed. They left the apartment a half hour later. She was impressed by the way Alex had combed his hair and done his makeup. He was really learning to be a girl.

"Are you ready, Kim Hana?" she asked.

"I think so" Alex said nervous.

"Good! From now on, until the end of our contract, your old life is over. Remember that, girl! But you don't need to look so concerned. I'm sure you'll love all that! Which girl wouldn't?"

END OF PART 38.1



## PART 38.2

The headquarters of the label was a modern and fancy building, located in the center of Seoul. Alex, Park Hara and the other girls were taken to a large meeting room on the top floor, where a group of well-dressed men were waiting for them.

Alex greeted the men with reverence, just like Park Hara had instructed him to do. He then sat down and remained silent. Park Hara had told him to speak only when someone asked him something. Respect for elders was something very serious in that country.

The men were very impressed with the girls, saying that they looked even better in person than in photographs. Alex wondered if those men had seen some photograph of him. He then remembered all the girly and embarrassing poses that he had been forced to do while he was being photographed by Park Hara. The girl had probably sent those pictures to the label, he concluded ashamed.

The men explained that the group's first single would be based on a cute concept, and their debut would be in six months. In the meantime, they would be trained by the label staff to improve the singing, dancing and the appearance of the girls.

When Alex heard that his eyes widened. More six months of training?!

"Umm... Excuse me, sir?" he said shyly, looking at the man who appeared to be the head of the group. He knew Park Hara annoyed by that, but he had no choice. "During this training period the term of our contract will already be running?"

"Oh, no!" the man said. "Just at the end of training will begin the term of one year established in the contract. But you don't need to worry about that, girl. We are very excited about you girls and we think your group will have a long and successful career with us."

Alex couldn't believe it. The time that he would be forced to live as a girl had been extended in six months! A year and a half as a woman! How would he survive so long in skirts?

At the end, one of the men said the meeting of the girls with the medical team of the label had been scheduled for the following day. Alex didn't pay so much attention to it. He had other concerns in mind, and the medical team probably would just check on the health of girls... Oh, he couldn't be more wrong.

END OF PART 38.2



The next day, early in the morning, the girls went to the medical clinic to meet the doctors of the music label. Once they arrived, they were separated, since there was a different team for each girl.

Alex was a little nervous about it. He followed a nurse who took him to an office where there were three doctors. They greeted Alex cheerfully and said he could be at ease. The nurse then collected some blood of Alex, saying that it was just a routine test.

After that, doctors asked a few questions about Alex's health and did another tests. At the end, just one of them remained in the office.

The man was about fifty, was partially bald and had a friendly smile.

"I have to say I was very eager to work on you, Alex... or Kim Hana. This will be your stage name, right?" he asked rhetorically. "Obviously, I have to wait the tests results before doing any procedure, but I would like to take a look at you now, if you do not mind. This will be a challenging job!"

Alex's ability to speak and understand Korean had improved since the beginning of his training, but he still had a hard time grasping all that people talked at certain times. At that moment, for example, he didn't understand everything the doctor had said, so he just smiled shyly and nodded.

The doctor then began looking every detail of Alex's face closely, writing down something on a clipboard from time to time. He also made some comments, but overall were technical terms and Alex couldn't understand anything. It made him more and more anxious.

"Now could you take off your dress, please?"

"What?"

"Don't worry, Kim Hana. I just need to take a look at your body, as a doctor, you know."

Without choice, Alex did what the doctor ordered. He then stood there, wearing only bra and panties in front of that man.

The doctor also looked at the body of Alex carefully, especially at 'his breasts'. At the end, he didn't seem as friendly as before.

"I will wait for your tests results and then we'll talk again" he again. "Friday is okay for you?"

"I g-guess" Alex stammered. "Do you think there is something wrong with me, doctor?"

"We'll talk about it on Friday" he said seriously, and Alex shivered.

END OF PART 39



PART 40.1

The following days were very distressing for Alex. That waiting for the next doctor's appointment was killing him. He chose not to think about what the doctor would say, though deep down he had an idea about what would be the topic of the next conversation. He knew it was something silly, but he didn't say anything about that to Park Hara, because he was afraid that she could blame him for something.

During these days of waiting, he and the girls had several meetings with the label's staff, and he realized that the months ahead would be really harsh. They would have singing, dance and body expression classes, would be trained to behave in public and would learn how to relate to the media and fans. All this on a daily basis. Alex had the impression that the label wanted to control every aspect of their lives.

When he mentioned it to Park Hara, the girl said she was already expecting this. She explained that the way the record labels treated their artists in Korea was very different from what happened in the West. Most of the artists were trained for years and years before their debut, like a diamond being cut. But since she, Alex and the other girls were already a 'bit old', this process would have to be done more quickly, intensively.

When Friday finally arrived, Alex dressed a red dress and high heels and returned to the medical clinic. The doctor was already waiting for him, and once again the man was with a serious expression.

"I'll cut to the chase, Alex" he said. "I was already suspicious of it, but now I'm sure. I know you're a man, and I want to know exactly what is happening here" he added, transforming the worst fears of Alex in reality.

END OF PART 40.1

PART 40.2

"I'm going to ask you again," the doctor said seriously. "I know you're not a girl, Alex. So, why are you pretending to be one?"

Alex felt a strong desire to get away from that place, but he was trembling so much that it would be impossible. He then considered his options. He could tell the truth to the doctor, explaining the misfortune that had taken him to that terrible situation. However, he soon concluded that this was a very risky choice. The doctor and especially the company would certainly get mad at him and the girls, and they could be sued for fraud. And worst of all: such a story would draw the attention of tabloids around the world. Alex would finally be famous, but not as he wanted. He thought he would never again be taken seriously by anyone.

Then, he had an idea. It was a stupid one, but he had no choice.

"I'm sorry, doc" he said pouting, with sad eyes. "I didn't want to fool you. It's just... I always wanted to be a girl! In fact, I think I've always been a girl deep down, and I always dreamed about being a K-pop Idol. So, when I met the girls... But I know it was a silly idea."

Alex cursed himself for saying such crap, but he was desperate. He then raised his eyes and looked at the doctor again. It was very hard to guess what he was thinking...

END OF PART 40.2



#### PART 41

Realizing that Alex was about to freak out when he got home, Park Hara told him to take a shower and then handed him some comfortable clothes. After that, she told him to tell her what had happened.

"The doctor knows, Park Hara!" Alex said, still desperate.

"What does he know?" she asked.

"That I'm a guy!"

Then, he explained her everything. After the doctor discovered the truth, Alex was forced to come up with that story that he had always been a girl deep down, and then he had decided to fulfill his dream. Next, to his astonishment, the Korean man said that he still disapproved what Alex had done, but he could understand his reasons. He wouldn't tell the truth to the record label and would introduce Alex to someone who could help him. He also said that Alex was already very feminine, and was clearly meant to be a woman. "I would never guess that you were male if I hadn't examined you so closely" he added.

"Well, it's good news, isn't?" Park Hara said at the end. "He's willing to help you, Kim Hana!"

"You don't understand! He thinks that I really want to be a girl and will introduce me to someone who can turn me into one! That's terrible! And stop calling me Kim Hana when we're alone!"

"We agreed that this is your name for now, remember? Now, stop being such a drama queen. It's not like they can do something that you don't want."

"But what if they decide to cut my... you know..."

"Your little thing? Well, I think that after a little time you would learn to love that!" she chuckled.  
"Now, seriously. If this happens, you can say that you can't do that right now because of the recovery time. You're on a tight schedule, and it will worsen when you become a K-pop Idol. Just relax, girl. Everything is just fine"

END OF PART 41



PART 42

In the following days, Alex barely had time to think about his issues. The training of the group became even more intense, and all he could do when he got home was to lie in the bed and sleep like a rock. The company's instructors were even more demanding than Park Hara, and the feminized man noticed that even the girl was always exhausted at the end of the day.

Talking about Park Hara, she kept saying that Alex's concerns were no big deal, and that he would be okay. Alex wasn't so sure about that. Whenever he was able to think about his situation, he felt nervous and anxious, fearing what might happen in the future. He also kept crying a lot, which was weird and annoying. He just wasn't able to control his emotions anymore.

If Park Hara was paying little attention to his concerns, he could at least find some support in the other girls of the group. They were getting closer to Alex, and they understood what he was feeling. He felt very happy about it. This kind of thing had never been too important to him in the past, but now he was feeling protected when he was with the girls. Unlike Park Hara, they were becoming his true friends.

END OF PART 42



In the following week, the girls finally had a day off on Sunday. Park Hara tried to convince all of them to stay home and train a bit more, at least in the morning, but they said, including Alex, that they really needed a little rest.

"Fine!" Park Hara said annoyed. "You can go, but I'll stay to train some of our songs."

Feeling extremely relieved for the first time in a long, Alex left the apartment in the company of the three other girls.

"Oh, Park Hara can be so obsessed sometimes!" Song Yeon said, while they were getting into a cab.

"Sometimes?" Choi Hyun said, raising an eyebrow. "She act this way all the time! That was kind of why our first lead singer left the group, after all."

"C'mon, girls" Jun Sunhwa said. "I know that Park Hara is tough, but it was she who somehow led us here. She and Kim Hana, of course!" she said looking at Alex, who blushed.

"That's right!" Song Yeon exclaimed, excited. "We just can't thank you enough, Alex! All we can do is make sure that you have some fun today! You are really in need of that with everything that's happening in your life."

Alex had to admit that that was a fun day. He was surrounded by beautiful Korean girls, who took him to several tourist attractions in Seoul. The city was as beautiful as Alex had imagined, and he would have enjoyed it even more if he wasn't wearing high heels.

They had lunch at a nice restaurant and, despite being forced to eat because a small portion because of his diet, Alex also liked it.

The afternoon activities weren't so interesting to him, since they went to the mall. Song Yeon said that if Alex preferred, they could do something else, but the feminized guy didn't want to spoil the fun of the girls. He even tried a few outfits - including a sexy and short black dress - that the girls said that would look wonderful on him.

When he came back home, early evening, Alex was feeling much better. However, this relief didn't last long. Checking his cell phone, he remembered that his new appointment with the doctor would be the next day...

END OF PART 43



#### PART 44.1

When Alex arrived at the doctor's office the next day, he saw the doctor he had known, Dr. Yeob, wasn't alone. There was another Korean middle-aged man, who seemed thrilled to see the feminized man.

"Nice to meet, Alex!" he said cheerfully. "I'm Dr. Koong, an old friend of Dr. Yeob. He told me about your little problem, and I am very happy with the possibility to help you fulfill your dream."

"Umm... Thank you!" Alex said embarrassed. "I really appreciate it!"

"You know... I've helped many transsexual women like you, but I think I've never met one so feminine as you. I really can't see someone like you living like a man, Alex. You're doing the right thing."

"This is fantastic to hear, Dr. Koong" Alex said smiling, although in fact he was hating that conversation.

"Tell me something, Miss. Are you already taking female hormones?"

"W-what?" Alex didn't know if he was more bothered by the fact that he had been called Miss by that man who knew that he was a male person or by the suggestion that he was taking female hormones.

Why would he do something like that? Obviously, the poor guy didn't know that Park Hara was giving him powerful hormones for a long time. "No! I'm not taking female hormones!"

"Are you sure, Alex? I need you to be completely honest with me. I'm not judging you or something. I'm just trying to help you."

"I swear, doctor!"

"Okay, Alex. I'll trust you. But that's weird... The results of the tests show that you have a substantial concentration of female hormones in your body..."

"I have what?" Alex exclaimed disturbed, wondering how that was possible.

END OF PART 44.1

PART 44.2

"Well, in this case you must have some hormonal dysfunction," Dr. Yeob said. "I'll have to investigate this. But this issue is somehow helping us! This way, your hormonal treatment will be much easier."

"Hormonal treatment?" Alex exclaimed with wide eyes.

"Yes, miss. We're going to start it today. I work with a very effective compound. You'll see that pretty soon your body will be very different."

The heart of the poor guy was racing. He didn't want his body to become even more feminine. What if he wasn't able to reverse the changes in the future? He was so distracted by his concern that he wasn't paying attention to what the doctor was saying anymore - something he would deeply regret some weeks later.

When he realized it, the man was holding a large syringe.

"Alex, could you get undressed, please?" Dr. Yeob said.

"W-why?" Alex asked, looking at the syringe startled.

"I'm going to give you the first shoot now. And I would like to take the opportunity to check your body, if you don't mind."

Alex didn't want that, but he was so distressed that he just couldn't think of any excuse.

"I... Umm... Okay" he said, cursing himself. He then took off his clothes, including his lingerie. After that, he bent down submissively so the doctor could give him the shoot in his butt.

"I see that you're using some interesting appliances. But I really need to see your 'whole' body."

He then helped Alex to remove his breast forms and fake pussy. Alex was using them all the time for a long, and he even felt weird without them at first. He missed the extra weight on his chest, and got a little annoyed by that thing dangling between his legs.

Then, looking down, Alex had a big shock. He saw that there were breasts sprouting in his chest! They were very small, but they were definitely real. And worst of all, his cock and balls were much smaller than before!

Burning in shame, he spoke about it with the doctor.

"Oh, that's not a big deal!" Dr. yeob said with a jovial tone. "This is probably happening because of your hormonal issue, and will greatly facilitate my work. You are completely sure that you aren't taking any other drug, right, Alex?"

"Absolutely!"

"Good. I'll trust you, and I need you to do the same from now on, okay? Your body really has a lot of potential... I can see that you'll be a very feminine woman, as you want so badly."

END OF PART 44.2



PART 45

"So, that's it?" Park Hara asked when Alex told her what had happened at the doctor's office.

"What you mean by 'that's it'?" Alex said, upset. "Did you hear that the doctor gave me a shot of female hormones? What am I going to do now? This is a disaster!"

"Don't be silly, Kim Hana. It's not like if this shot would change your body overnight. Also, I'm sure any changes caused by hormones will be reversible. These things take time! You don't need to freak out."

"I don't know, Park Hara... And that's not all."

"What you mean?"

At first, Alex was reluctant to tell the girl about the changes that had already happened in his body. That would be too humiliating... However, he knew he needed to talk about it.

"Well, the doctor said he needed to see my body, I mean, my whole body, and then..." before he lost the guts, Alex told everything to Park Hara, including the fact that he now had real small breasts and his penis was much smaller than before.

"Oh my gosh, sweetie! I'm so sorry! Did he tell you the cause of this hormonal issue?" she asked, although she knew very well the answer to this question, since she had been making him take female hormones for a long time without his knowledge.

"He doesn't know yet" Alex said, with his eyes filled with tears.

"Well, I'm sure that he'll find out, and then everything will be fine. Just remember: They can't perform any procedure in your body that you don't want. In the future, you can even say that you want to stop the hormone treatment for some time because it is making you feel sick, so this is harming your training. "

"Do you really think so?"

"Absolutely, Kim Hana. Just trust me..."

END OF PART 45



PART 46.1

In the following month, Alex kept going to the doctor's office every week to take the female hormones shots. However, he had little time to think about his problems.

The training of the group was becoming more and more intense, and the feminized man had already realized that being a K-pop Idol wasn't a simple task as some people imagined. Every day, he and the other girls had lessons of dance, singing, and acting.

In addition, they also went to the gym, were trained on how they should behave and speak, and were instructed on how to pose for photo shoots.

From the beginning, all the instructors (except the singing teacher) had realized that Alex was the "girl" who most needed to evolve, so they were always very tough on "her".

After the first month, everything that Alex was learning was really becoming natural for him. He no longer needed to try so hard to act and talk as a girl, and his ability to speak Korean and dance was improving considerably. He was even thinking as a female, which made him very scared.

All his movements and actions, however small they might be, were being molded to be the more feminine possible. He no longer left his apartment without being all dolled up, even when the other girls were using little makeup and casual outfits.

He understood what was happening when their manager explained that in K-pop every member from a group had a different personality, and they had decided that Alex, as the lead singer, would be the cutest and girliest girl.

Hearing this, Alex's jaw dropped, and he covered his mouth with his manicured hands, in a gesture that had already become natural for him, even without him realizing it.

This news made him feel even more emasculated. He, the only member of the group that wasn't a real girl, should be the girliest of all. Could it get any worse?

END OF PART 46.1

PART 46.2

Alex and the girls were then taken to the studio of the record label, where they met the two music producers who would work with the group.

For the first time in a long while, Alex forgot his sticky situation for a moment. He had never been in a studio of that magnitude, and he was amazed at everything around him, as if he were a child in a large toy shop. The producers were two friendly men in their thirties, who said they were eager to work with the girls.

Oh, Alex had dreamed of this moment for so long... Then he thought it was a pity that now that he had his great chance to be a music star, it was as the girliest girl of an already very girly group.

Instead of his old rocker outfit, consisting of a black shirt, a leather jacket and torn jeans, he was wearing a long-sleeved white shirt that exposed his belly, a mini skirt, pink tights, and even high heels! He could no longer play his guitar because it would ruin his perfectly manicured pink nails, and moreover it wasn't what they expected him to do in the presentations. How could he dance holding a guitar? He no longer had a beard, since now his face was as smooth as the skin of a baby, and it was always perfectly made-up. His former male hairstyle had been replaced by a female one, and he knew it would be even worse with time.

That really wasn't happening as he had envisioned...

END OF PART 46.2

### PART 46.3

The producers then said they would record a demo of the first single of the group that day. Alex knew that song well. He had helped to write "Summer Love", after all, at the time when he still had the appearance of a man. That had been the beginning of everything. Only if he had known that this music would change his life that way...

First, the producers called the session musicians, so they could record the instrumental part of the song. At that point, the old Alex went into action again. A little shy at first, he began to offer a few suggestions to improve the music production. However, pretty soon he was discussing ideas with producers without any constraints. He was wearing a skirt and high heels, sure, but he knew how to make a song.

The producers were impressed with the knowledge of "Kim Hana", and they even said that "she" could work as a producer when "her" career as a K-pop Idol was over, many years in the future, of course.

Alex didn't want his career as a female singer to last so long, but he thanked the men, truly flattered.

So, it was time for the girls to record the vocals, and Alex would be the last one. He saw that the four girls had greatly improved as singers, especially Park Hara. She wasn't only the most applied of all during classes, but she was also asking Alex for some advice about singing lately.

However, when it came time for Alex to sing, it was clear to everyone why he was the lead singer of the group. His tuning and timbre were just perfect. Such a great talent.

While he was singing, Alex tried not to think about the lyrics of the song, but it was very difficult, especially in the chorus:

Kiss me, Kiss me,  
Lovely boy!  
All I want is be your love!

Kiss me, Kiss me,  
Lovely boy!  
I'm the girl who will steal your heart!

Oh, Alex just wanted to die! After so much training, he was singing it like a real silly girl in love, and his voice had never been so high and girly (but this was also due to the female hormones he had been taking for several months, although he didn't know it).

To make matters worse, Alex realized after a while, aghast, that he was even dancing some parts of that song's choreography as he sang. Even his body was betraying him!

At the end, the producers were euphoric. They said that music would certainly be a hit, and the girls would be one of the most famous people in South Korea.

Without choice, Alex just clapped and squealed along with the girls at hearing this...

-----



#### PART 47

#### ABOUT A MONTH LATER...

Alex woke up suddenly, feeling disoriented. His vision was blurred, but he could see that he was lying on a bed in a simple room with white walls. What place was that? How had he gotten there? Alex tried to remember what had happened earlier, but this only made his head hurt. Something was very wrong... He needed to find out what was going on.

He tried to get up, but his legs were too weak. Just then he realized that he was only wearing a simple white nightgown. What did that mean? He got even more scared, and thought of asking for help. But would it safe? Who would show up?

He was still thinking about it when the door of the room was opened suddenly. Alex would have screamed in fright if he wasn't feeling so numb.

Even with blurred vision, Alex could see that the person who had entered the room was a middle-aged woman wearing a white dress.

"Oh, are you awake?" the woman said in Korean, smiling. "I didn't expect it after that sedative."

"Where I am?" Alex asked faintly.

"Don't you remember?" the woman said, as she opened a cabinet in the corner. "You're in a hospital, my dear. Don't worry, though. It's normal that you feel a little disoriented right now. But I assure you that everything will be fine."

"A hospital? Why am I here?"

"Shhh... Just relax, my dear. You will remember everything in time. The team is almost ready for you."

Now Alex was really worried. What was happening? None of it made sense!

"It's time for us to go, so I'll have to put you to sleep again" the woman continued. "Sweet dreams, my angel!"

Just then Alex realized there was a UV attached to his arm, through which the woman was injecting something. As he observed it, he suddenly remembered everything that had happened in the hours before. He now knew what was about to happen, and it was terrible! He needed to do something before it were too late!

However, he soon began to get more and more sleepy. He could barely move a finger.

"I... I..." he stammered, just before losing consciousness again. Alex was then taken to another place by the woman, completely unable to escape his unwanted fate...

END OF PART 47

-----

Oh, scary! Why is Alex in a hospital? What is about to happen?



#### PART 48.1

##### A FEW HOURS EARLIER:

Alex got to the hospital where worked the doctors of the record label accompanied by the other girls of the group. He thought it was weird that all they had been called to the place at the same day, but he didn't have the opportunity to ask the girls if they knew what was happening - Along the way, a record label's employee, who was with them in the car, spoke endlessly, detailing the datebook of the girls in the coming weeks.

When they arrived at the hospital, each of the girls was taken to a different place, which made Alex even more apprehensive. When he reached his destination, he saw that Dr. yeob and Dr. Koong were waiting for him. He didn't know if that was a good thing or a bad thing. On the one hand, those faces were known to him; however, those were the men who were convinced that Alex wanted to be a girl, and they were willing to help him in this endeavor in all possible ways.

"Good morning, Alex" Dr. Yeob said. "Please, take a seat. How are you feeling today?"

"I'm okay, doctor" Alex said, smoothing his skirt and sitting like a real lady. "Thanks."

"That's good to know" Dr. Koong said, smiling. "And please, forgive my colleague. He apparently forgot that you now prefer to be called Kim Hana."

"That's true" Dr. Yeob. "I'm sorry, young lady."

"That's okay" Alex said, once again bothered by being called 'young lady'.

"So, tell us, Kim Hana" Dr. Yeob said. "How are you feeling about your process of feminization."

"Umm... I'm loving it!" Alex says, knowing that any other answer could arouse unwanted suspicions. "I feel I'm getting in touch with my true self for the first time in my life" he added, blushing. He just couldn't believe he was being forced to say these things.

"Fantastic!" Dr. Yeob exclaimed. "And the things will only get better from here forward. You'll be the girl you always dreamed of being, Kim Hana. Trust us!" and saying so, the doctor took a large syringe.

Alex knew what was about to happen. That was another dose of the female hormones that were being administered in his body. Resigned, he got up and lifted his skirt. However, a few moments after the shooting, Alex began to feel a little dizzy. That was weird. He had never felt like this before. The doctors then helped him to sit again.

"That was just a mild sedative, Kim Hana" Dr. Yeob said, and Alex got wide eyed. "That way, you'll feel more relaxed as you get ready for today's procedures."

Procedures? What was the doctor talking about? He wasn't aware of any of that! Alex felt completely terrified, and he wanted to run away from that place. However, he had no strength to it. His whole body was so numb...

"Now, we'll explain everything that will happen today," Dr. Koong said. "I'm sure you will get very pleased by what we've planned..."

END OF PART 48.1

-----



#### PART 48.2

As Alex was listening to the doctors detailing everything that would happen that day, he felt increasingly panicked. What was about to happen was terrible. He needed to do something! However, he was unable to move or even speak coherently because of the sedative.

So, there he was, hearing what those men would do with his body, with no chance to avoid it. Were those procedures reversible? Alex wasn't sure, and it terrified him even more.

At the end of the explanation, Dr. yeob called a nurse, and the poor guy was taken to another place. Even before reaching his destination, he was already unconscious...

END OF PART 48.2

-----





## PART 49.1

When Alex regained consciousness, his whole body was aching. He realized that he was back to the bedroom, so surgery should have already ended. The surgery! Alex needed to see how bad was the damage. However, he soon realized that his whole body and his face were wrapped in bandages, as if he were a mummy.

A little later, the same nurse who had spoken to him before the surgery came in the room.

"Oh, are you awake again, my dear?" she said.

"Yes" Alex said weakly. "I need to see..."

"I know you're anxious to see your new look but you need to be patient. Everything is swollen right now. But don't worry. The team ensured that the procedure was a success, and you will look stunning! Just like a real doll! Now, you need to rest. I'll be back soon to see how you are."

Alex remained in the bed for a long time. At one point, he even lost track of days and he thought he would go mad. All he had to spend time were some Korean women's magazines, and his new phone, full of K-pop music.

From time to time, he was also visited by someone from the record company, and then he learned that the other girls of the group had also undergone cosmetic interventions, though not as extreme as those that Alex had been submitted.

Then, one morning, Dr. Yeob and Dr. Koong appeared in the room again.

"Good morning, Kim Hana" Dr. Koong said. "How are you feeling today?"

"I'm okay, Doc" Alex said automatically. Physically he was indeed feeling better, but emotionally he was a mess.

"Great!" Dr. Yeob. "You've been recovering for two weeks, so I think it's time for us to take off your bandages. The swelling should be gone by now."

Alex's heart quickened when he heard it. He would finally be able to see what the doctors had done with him.

"Let's start with your face, okay?" Dr. Koong said, and then he helped Alex to remove the bandages. He then handed a mirror to Alex, and began to explain everything.

"I'm happy to say that we were able to accomplish everything that we had planned. First, your nose: as you can see, it's much smaller and more delicate now. It definitely looks feminine, as you wished. About your mouth, we changed its color, so now it's naturally pinkish, and we also gave you heart shaped lips, something very popular among girls currently."

Horrified, Alex saw that all this was true. Moreover, he realized that his upper lip was shorter now, so his lips were naturally separated, as if he was always ready to be kissed. He tried to close his lips, but it was hard and just didn't feel right anymore. He thought in disgust that no man could have lips like that. However, the worst was yet to come...

"Last but not least, let's talk about your eyes!" Dr. Koon said, clearly thrilled. "This wasn't easy. I think we had never actually tried something like that before, but I'm very happy with the result. First, we changed the color of it too, so now you have dark brown eyes. A lot of girls here would die to have blue eyes like you had, but I think this new color really suits your new look, just as you wanted. And you can always use colored contact lenses when you want, as a bunch of K-pop idols."

Alex couldn't understand. He had never said explicitly that he wanted this 'new look', as doctors were insinuating. Someone was behind all this, and he had almost absolute certainty about who this person was...

"And then" the doctor continued, "we also changed the shape of your eyes, giving them an Asian appearance. This is procedure about which we are most proud of. I guess now no one can even suspect that you aren't Kim Hana, a Korean girl."

Alex thought shocked that the doctor was right. It was incredible how his new eyes, in addition to all the other procedures, had changed his appearance so dramatically. He wasn't just looking like a girl, but as a girl from another country and ethnicity! Not even his mother would be able to recognize him now.

All this was very disturbing, and he still needed see the changes in his body...

END OF PART 49.1



Next, the doctors removed the bandages from Alex's body. The first thing the feminized man noticed was that his boobs were bigger than before. They weren't giants, since Alex was supposed to look like a Korean girl, but still it was a huge shock to him.

He touched them and realized that they feel even more real and sensitive than before, when his "breasts" were composed of that strange substance that Park Hara had injected in his body months before.

"Don't they look amazing?" Dr. Yeob asked, realizing that Alex seemed hypnotized by his new boobs.

"Umm... Y-yeah!" the feminized guy exclaimed, while a nightmarish idea was forming in his mind: what if his new breasts were real implants? He shuddered at that thought. Still, he had no choice so he took a deep breath and asked just that to the doctor.

"Oh, this is something far better than those conventional silicone implants, Kim Hana" Dr. yeob said, barely containing his enthusiasm. "You know, Korea is known as a reference in the field of plastic surgery for a reason... In your breasts, we used a revolutionary new technique. Basically, through small incisions that don't even leave scars, we inserted a compound made from stem cells, which is able to stimulate breasts development as occurs with cisgender girls during puberty. At first, this technique was intended to only help women who have lost breasts because of cancer, but those in charge soon realized that it could also be very useful for transgender people. Thus, during the last few

weeks, your body had developed real breasts, as authentic as those of any other girl. Isn't that great?"

Alex had to admit that from a scientific perspective that was an impressive accomplishment. However, he didn't give a shit about science at that time. He had boobs... Real boobs!

"They may grow a little more, but not so much" the doctor continued. "However, I think this size matches your body structure perfectly."

At this point Alex had to agree with the doctor. The last thing he wanted was bigger breasts.

"Now let's talk about the other changes" Dr. Koong said. "We reduced the circumference of your waist and increased the size of your hips, just enough to make you look like an Asian girl. Also, we shaved your neck, so now your Adam's apple is gone forever, and we altered a bit your vocal cords."

"You already were able to sound like a girl very well, it's true" Dr. Yeob said. "But now your voice is naturally feminine, and much higher than before. In fact, even if you wanted to, you won't be able to sound like a man anymore... But I'm sure that it won't be a problem, right?"

"I... I..." Alex stammered, realizing that his voice was actually even more girly now. He was almost sounding like a cartoon character, especially since he was so emotionally distressed.

"Now about your private parts..." Dr. Koong started, and Alex became even more desperate. He touched down there, and didn't feel his cock. Would they have...?

"I know it can be frustrating" the doctor continued, stopping Alex's dark thoughts, "but we couldn't perform a sex reassignment surgery... for now. Despite all scientific and technological advances, this is still a major surgery, and your body needs to be prepared for such procedure. However, we gave you a vagina prosthesis much better than the one you were using before. "

Alex felt very relieved to hear that. At least his dick he hadn't lost... yet.

"It can remain attached to your body for many months, until you're ready for the final surgery" Dr. Yeob explained. "And finally, we implanted into your body a tiny silicone rod which will help in your transition. It will release high doses of female hormone on your body constantly, accelerating the process of feminization. This is the most effective hormonal treatment available! So, what do you think about all this?" the doctor asked, smiling widely.

"I... I have no words. All this is so... amazing!" he lied. "Thank you very much for all you two have done for me!"

"You're welcome, Kim Hana" Dr. Koong said. "Now I think you're ready to shine as a K-pop idol!"

"Yeah, this is so exciting" Alex said, though he was thinking of something else. All he wanted now was to find the person responsible for all that mess... Park Hara. He was sure that she had concocted it all. That was the only plausible explanation.

This time he was really mad, and he didn't even know about everything that the doctors had done. Apparently, they had forgotten to mention another "small" intervention... Something that for them might seem unimportant, but that would be a shock for Alex in the future...

END OF PART 49.2







PART 50.1

Alex had to stay in the hospital for a few more days. He insisted that he was already feeling well, but the doctors were adamant about it. He knew the "other girls" of the group were there too, but he wasn't allowed to leave his room to visit them. Therefore, his encounter with Park Hara had to be postponed.

In the morning he was finally discharged from the hospital, an employee of the record label was there to pick him up. The man smiled, said that "Kim Hana" looked lovely, and handed "her" a bouquet of flowers. Blushing furiously, Alex took the flowers and thanked the man for his kindness.

The man then said they needed to leave because Kim Hana had a scheduled appointment.

"Umm... How about the other girls?" Alex asked, once again feeling a shiver because of his new voice. During the last few days, he had tested his voice several times, trying to sound like a male person, even if it was like a boy entering puberty. However, he soon realized that the doctors were right. It

was simply impossible. The best he could do was to sound like a silly girl trying to emulate her boyfriend, or even worse, a young girl trying to sound like her older brother.

"Don't worry about the other girls"the man said. "Other employees will come get them."

"I see... But can I talk to them for a moment?"

"Not now, I'm sorry. Don't worry, though. You girls will see each other later. We're planning a surprise for all of you."

"Another one?" Alex thought, worried.Thanks to last surprise planned for him, he now had the face and the body of a Korean girl! Still, as usual, he had no choice. He then went into the bathroom and put on the clothes that the man had brought to him.

Instinctively, he sought his makeup kit inside his purse so he could make his face presentable. When he realized what he was doing, he got horrified. "Great!" he thought. "Now even my mind is trying to feminize me!" Despite all the discomfort of that situation, at the end he decided to indeed put some makeup on his face. Otherwise, the man of the record label might find it strange.

There was a car waiting for them outside the hospital. Alex had to admit it was good to breathe fresh air after so long inside that place. It would have been even better if he wasn't wearing high heels and a skirt.

He was still feeling a little weak, so the man had offered his arm in support. Alex really didn't want to be supported by a man, but he just didn't know how to refuse that offer politely. He knew that as a woman – especially as a girly Korean girl – he was supposed to be grateful for that kind of courtesy. So, without thinking, he simply grabbed the man's arm with his now fragile and delicate hands.

Another thing he noticed along the way was that after so many procedures the balance of his body had been altered. He was already walking like a woman before, sure, but now that his waist was smaller and his hips larger, he just couldn't walk without moving his hips from side to side, even if he wanted to. This fact made him feel even more embarrassed.

At the end of the walk, the man opened the door of the car so Alex could get in, and the feminized man did it as a perfect lady. He could hardly believe how much it seemed natural now. After about fifteen minutes, the car stopped again and Alex could see where he had been taken.

"Oh no!" he thought, knowing that it couldn't mean anything good for him...

END OF PART 50.1

-----



## PART 50.2

The employee of the record label helped Alex out of the car and then they entered the beauty salon in front of them. The feminized man just couldn't believe in his "luck". Immediately after being discharged from hospital, he was taken directly to a salon, where they would certainly make him look even more like a living Asian doll.

"This is my life now. This is who I am"he thought, feeling depressed. "At least until the end of that damn contract! Then, I'll have to find a way to look like an American man again." Would that be possible? He looked so different now... That transformation was quite unbelievable... Alex decided, once again, not to think about it at that time or he would go crazy.

The feminized man had already been in other beauty salons, of course, but none like that one. The place was a huge and extremely fancy, with marble floors, light pink walls, and a lot of flower pots.

What made him puzzled was the fact that the place was apparently empty. The only sound he could hear was the soft background music. What was going on?

Before Alex could ask that to the man, a young woman appeared in the place. She was wearing a uniform of the same color of the salon walls, and was smiling warmly.

"Good morning, sir" she said to the man. "It is good to see that you managed to get here on time. "So, this is our new star?" she asked, looking at Alex.

"Yes. Her name is Kim Hana."

"Nice to meet you, Kim Hana! I'm Lee Sojin. The other girls and I were eager to finally meet you. Oh, you already look so fabulous! You certainly are one of the most gorgeous girls I have ever seen! We'll have to be very creative to make you look even better" she giggled. "But don't worry, Miss. All the girls here are very competent. That's why this is known as the best salon in Seoul!"

"Thanks" Alex said with downcast eyes, again feeling embarrassed. "But...Hmm... where are the other clients?"

"Oh, we canceled all the other appointments. All the girls will take care exclusively of you, isn't that great? Well, you deserve it. You'll be a star pretty soon and today is a very important day for you. I can only imagine how you must be feeling excited!"

"But what will happen..."

"Enough talk, honey. We only have a few hours to get you ready. We have to start now!"

The young woman then dragged Alex to a kind of dressing room where she gave him a flamboyant robe which looked more like a kimono and flip-flops.

"You can get changed here. Meanwhile, I'll tell everyone you arrived. I'm sure that you'll enjoy your time here, sweetie. We're going to do the full service!!"

And with that, she left the place, making Alex even more apprehensive...

END OF PART 50.2

-----





### PART 50.3

When Alex was ready, he was taken back to the main area of the salon, and this time he was greeted by six Korean girls, who would work on him that day.

"Hmm... Hi!" the feminized man blushed. He was feeling very intimidated by the situation. "I am Kim Hana" he said, hating the fact he had to say so. What disturbed him most was that his sentence had sounded very authentic. With his new girly voice, and his acquired ability to speak virtually flawless Korean, even he was beginning to find hard to believe that he was actually an American man.

"I can't let this happen" he thought, desperate. "This is only a temporary thing. Soon I will return to being the old Alex". However, it was hard to convince himself about that as he glimpsed his reflection

in one of the mirrored walls of the salon. "Dammit", he cursed. He looked so good wearing that kimono... How he would have loved to know that *stunning Korean girl* in the past, when he *was* a man.

"We know who you're, sweetie" said one of the women, awakening Alex from his reverie. "We were waiting for you! And I have to say that Lee Sojin is right. You already look so cute! It's an honor for us to work on you, and we hope you come back often! So, let's start, shall we?"

First, Alex was taken to another room to have his body waxed. He knew it would be a futile effort to say that he didn't need waxing, so he just remained silent and endured that torturous procedure. Next, he went to another room, and was told to lie down on a massage bed. This always was his favorite part during his visits to beauty salons, and this time it was even better. Two girls massaged his body at the same time, while a third took care of his face. Alex got so relaxed that he almost forgot his tough situation. But obviously, this moment of joy wouldn't last forever..

Back to the salon's main area, Alex sat on a hairdressing chair. Then, a girl began to put a facial mask on his face, while two others started working on his hands and feet. Soon enough, two hairdressers began brushing his hair, while they discussed what they would do first.

There were a total of five girls working on Alex! He had to admit that receiving all this attention from so many beautiful Korean girls was something very nice, but he knew they were there to make him look even more feminine, if such a thing was even possible!

Also, after some time, he began to feel a growing sense of helplessness. Those girls could do whatever they wanted with him, and there was nothing he could do to stop them now. He felt even more like a living doll.

After some time, someone began to wash Alex's hair, and he ventured to ask what they were intending to do.

"Don't worry about it, cutie pie!" said one of the girls. "We received specific instructions from your record label about the look that they want you to have, and we think it will really suit you. I'm sure you'll love it!"

The girl responsible for his face had put something over his eyes so he couldn't see what was going on. Not long after, his hair began to be cut, and after that he felt something being attached to his head. That could mean only one thing: He was getting extensions! The process was very time consuming, and little by little Alex began to feel the extra weight on his head, while the extensions brushed against his neck and his back. That was so weird. How could they expect him to get used to having long hair? "Another big step toward womanhood" he thought, scared.

When the procedure was finally over, the girls started to spread something smelly in his hair. Next, it was washed and cut again, and he felt it being curled up by something hot. Finally, his hair was combed, while the face mask was removed.

"Are you ready to see your new hairstyle, Kim Hana?" one of the hairdressers asked.

"I guess so" Alex replied.

"Okay! You can look now!"

"Oh my..." Alex exclaimed, flabbergasted, when he saw his reflection. His hair not only was long now, but it had also been dyed jet black! If he had thought there was no way for them to make him look even more like an Asian girl, he couldn't be more wrong.

"What you think, sweetie?" asked the hairdresser.

"I... I..." once again, and more than ever, he just wasn't sure about who he was anymore...

END OF PART 50.3



## PART 50.4

Alex didn't even have time to recover from the trauma of seeing his new hairstyle when another girl approached to put makeup on his face.

She was the prettiest of them all, and smiled at Alex in a way that would have made his cock hard if it wasn't buried deep somewhere inside his fake pussy.

The girl was using eyeliner to create a "kitten flick" look, and red lipstick. Her face was almost mesmerizing, and she spoke softly, making Alex feel good.

She then began doing his makeup, explaining all procedures, and how she would highlight the pretty features of "Kim Hana's" face to make "her" look even better.

The girl started with foundation, stroking Alex's face with her long fingers. After that, she worked on his eyes, using two shades of eyeshadow, eyeliner and mascara.

Then, she asked the feminized man to pout, and put blush on his cheeks. Finally, her attention turned to his mouth. She analyzed it carefully, and then stated she knew the perfect shade of lipstick for "Kim Hana". She used a light pink lipstick and a bit of lipgloss, and said she had finished.

When Alex saw his reflection again, he realized that he was indeed looking gorgeous, even more beautiful and feminine than the girl who had worked on his face. He thought he might freak out at any time. His mind just wasn't being able to process everything that was going on.

"You can get up now, honey, said the makeup artist. "The other girls are ready to help you to get dressed for your big day! I hope to see you again soon! Good luck, and remember that you are looking stunning!"

She then blew a kiss to Alex, so she wouldn't ruin his makeup, and the feminized man went to the last stage of his ordeal, fearing what was to come... What would his outfit be?

END OF PART 50.4



PART 50.5

Alex was then taken to another room, where three other women were waiting for him. They all praised his hair and makeup, and soon after one of them took the dress he would wear.

It was pink and short, with lots of lace and frills, and a delicate satin ribbon around the waist. He was expecting that his outfit would be girly, but he hadn't imagined it would *that girly*. He wondered again where the hell he would be taken once he was properly dressed.

"Isn't this the most precious thing you've ever seen?" asked the girl who was holding the dress.

"Absolutely!" the feminized guy said, pretending he was as excited about it as the girl.

"You know, I kind of envy you" she giggled. "As a K-pop Idol, you'll be able to present yourself all dolled up on daily basis! Isn't that like a dream coming true? Dressing breathtaking dresses and stunning heels all the time... Oh, girl, you're so lucky!"

"I know, right?" Alex said giggling as well, although in fact he was very terrified by this prospect. "Which girl wouldn't love such a life?" he added. *Well, maybe a girl who had been a regular guy just a few months before*, he thought.

Alex had a moment of privacy to put on his underwear, which was a lingerie set consisting of white lace panties and a matching strapless bra. Next, he pulled on a slip, and then the women finally helped him to wear the dress.

After a few minor adjustments, during which he felt like a mere mannequin, they said the dress looked perfect. Then, his feet were placed in 4 inch pink sandals heels, which left on display his well manicured toenails.

After that, he received a small silver purse, chandelier earrings, and some bracelets and rings. The girls then declared that "Kim Hana" was ready.

Facing his reflection again, Alex saw the personification of female beauty. It was increasingly difficult to think of himself as a man.

He didn't have much time to reflect about it because soon someone said a car was waiting to take him to his commitment...

END OF PART 50.5

#### PART 51.1

Upon leaving the salon, Alex was surprised to see that it was already dark. He hadn't imagined he had spent so long in that place.

He soon saw the car that the label record had sent to pick him up, and the driver opened the door so he could get in. The feminized man then realized that there was another person in the back seat of the car. It was Yu Joo-hyun, a middle-aged man who was the producer in charge of the group.

"Good evening, Miss" he said. "I've to say that you look fabulous.

"Thank you, sir" Alex said, as he crossed his legs at the knee like a proper lady.

"You know, when we first met you, we knew that you had potential, and of course we trust our doctors, but we didn't imagine that you could look like a Korean girl so convincingly. Your transformation is truly amazing."

"I agree, sir."

"Are you happy about the result?"

"Absolutely" he lied.

"Good. It was very nice to find someone like you, Alex... A very talented girl who appreciates so much our music and culture that was even willing to look like a native to be an idol in our country. Oh, and I forgot that from now on we should only call you Kim Hana. I'm sorry."

At this point Alex got very confused. He had never said that he wanted to look like an authentic Korean girl. In fact, he had thought he would keep looking like an American girl because the Korean music industry wanted to expand its market, and an American star could be important for the K-pop to get a larger fan base in the United States.

As it was obvious now, Alex was wrong. But why the people from the record company had thought he was willing to turn into Kim Hana, a native Korean girl?

Again, he concluded it could only be Park Hara's fault. He didn't know how yet, but she certainly had plotted it all. Oh, he just wanted to kill her now...

"Before we reach our destination" the producer said. "There are some things I need to explain to you. Over the past weeks, we have built a complete new identity for you. Now, for all purposes, you're a 20 years old Korean girl, born in a small town called Yeoncheon, in Gyeonggi Province."

20 years old? Alex thought it made no sense! He was a 25 years old person, after all! Then, thinking about his new appearance, he concluded that he could easily pass for someone a few years younger. In fact, he wondered if anyone could believe he was 25 years old.

"We did a research in such a city" the producer continued, "and we discovered that about two decades ago a little girl named Kim Hana lived there, before her parents decided to move to Seoul. Unfortunately, they all died shortly after in a tragic accident, and they had any other close relative. So, if someone decides to investigate your past, they will think you are such girl, and this way your new identity is safe."

"You'll say you grew up here in Seoul with your parents, and that you were homeschooled. You were a shy girl, so you didn't have many friends. Still, you always had a great passion for music, and a few years ago you faced your shyness to attend an audition of the record label. You were approved and since then you have been trained for your debut. The other girls joined you later, forming the group."

After that, the producer explained further details of Alex's new identity.

"I know That's a lot of information to digest at once, but you'll have some time to assimilate all this. For tonight, just try to avoid detailed questions about your past. Oh, and you'll also receive your new documents soon."

Alex was in shock. He knew nothing of that story was true, but for some reason it made him feel even more trapped in his new persona. Now, he wasn't just pretending to be a random girl, but someone with a full life story. He was very stunned by all this, and he had a lot of questions in mind. However, there was another issue more urgent.

"Sir, where are we going?"

"Oh, no one told you yet, right?" he smiled. "Don't worry. You'll find out soon . We're almost there."

Then, after endless twenty minutes, they finally reached their destination. When Alex saw where he was, he got so frightened that he thought he would pass out...

END OF PART 51.1

## PART 51.2

Alex realized he was in front of a large event hall, and there were many people entering the place, besides a lot of photographers taking pictures of everything. It was clear that a special event was about to happen there, and the feminized man had a bad feeling about it. He also felt mortified at the thought that he would have to leave the car in front of so many people dressed that way.

Because of this, he got very relieved when he realized that the driver didn't stop in front of the main entrance. Instead, he went to a side street where there was an alternative door. However, at the same time, Alex wondered why they would get in through that passageway.

"Well, Kim Hana" said the producer. "I think it's time to explain to you what's going on."

*Finally*, Alex thought.

"Tonight" the man continued. "You girls are going to be presented as the new stars of our record label. As expected, many celebrities and journalists came to honor our new group, but I was told that the event tonight will more crowded than usual. There is lots of buzz in relation to the group of you girls. Apparently, a demo recording was leaked to the public. These things sometimes happen by accident... and other times we make it happen on purpose" the man smiled mischievously.

"Anyway, many people are convinced that there is a girl with a special talent in the group... They say she's a very amazing singer, and she may become one of the biggest stars in K-pop... Well, the girl about whom they are talking about is you, Kim Hana."

Alex became even more desperate to hear that, feeling an overwhelming pressure. That whole situation couldn't be real. As if the fact that he would have to pretend to be a girl for so long wasn't enough, now there was a great expectation about him – or better, about Kim Hana, the Korean girl he had become. That wouldn't work... That was craziness.

"Sir" he said with a trembling voice. "I... I don't think I can do this. It's just..."

"Shhh... Calm down, Kim Hana. It's completely normal to feel nervous in a moment like this. I've seen it countless times. Don't worry, though, because you'll do great! I'm pretty convinced that you were born to be a star!"

That man hadn't understood what Alex meant. And how could he? He had no idea that *Kim Hana* was actually a guy.

The feminized was still thinking of a way to escape when he was escorted out of the car and then taken to a small, elegant lounge, inside the building. It was a kind of anteroom of the main hall, and he could hear the buzz of the crowd that was on the other side of the door. In that small lounge, there were about twenty people, most of them putting the finishing touches on the makeup of four girls that the Alex knew well – they were his bandmates, after all.

He advanced with uncertain steps, hearing the clicks of his sky-high heels, and feeling his new long hair brushing against his bare shoulders and back. When he was close enough, the girls looked at him, puzzled.

"Hi!" said Song Yeon. "Have we met before?"

*Oh, crap!* Alex thought. Song Yeon wasn't recognizing him, and he knew by the expression of other girls that they also didn't know who he was. He thought it wasn't so surprising, considering how much he had changed during his stay in the hospital.

"Hey" he said, embarrassed. "I am..."

"Allow me to make the introductions" the producer interrupted him, smiling. "Ladies, please know the new Kim Hana!"

The four girls looked at each other, dumbfounded. That was too incredible to be true.

"Oh my gosh!" Choi Hyun exclaimed. "Alex? Is it really you?"

The truth is that not even the feminized man was sure about the answer to this question...

END OF PART 51.2

### PART 51.3

"No way!" said Jun Sunhwa, also having a hard time to believe that this perfect Korean girl before her was actually the American guy she had met a few months ago. "This can't be Alex! This is impossible!"

"Of course she isn't Alex" said Yu Joo-hyun, the producer of the group. "She's *Kim Hana*. From now on, for all purposes, Alex never existed. I have already talked about it with you girls. All of you need to remember it or we can get in trouble."

"We're sorry, sir" Song Yeon said. "It's just that... *Kim Hana*, is it really you?"

"Yes" Alex said, blushing. "I know I look quite different, but yeah... this is me."

"Wow!" Choi Hyun exclaimed. "Even your voice sounds different. And you look so..."

"Marvelous!" Jun Sunhwa completed. "Oh, Kim Hana, this is so fantastic! How are you feeling about your transformation?"

For a moment, Alex almost told the truth about his feelings. He was hating all that, of course, and he wanted more than anything to go back to being the guy he had been before. In addition, he was very frightened by the fact that even he was having trouble seeing himself as a man.

However, he knew he couldn't say something like that with the producer around. That man had no idea that Alex was actually a male person.

Also, he could see how much Song Yeon, Choi Hyun and Jun Sunhwa were happy. They were about to become K-pop Idols, as they had dreamed all their lives. He could sympathize with them. He knew if he were about to become a Rock Star he would be feeling overjoyed...

Instead, there he was, wearing a pink dress and high heels, soon to become one of the cutest and prettiest girls of Korean Music... He decided not to think about his misery at that time. He really didn't want to spoil the moment that the three girls were experiencing. He really liked them, after all.

His real problem was with Park Hara. He realized that all this time she had remained a step behind, observing Alex with an enigmatic expression. It was impossible to know what she was thinking. At that moment, he was hating her more than he had ever hated anyone in his entire life. She was the one to blame for everything that had happened, and the feminized man would address this issue later. He didn't know how yet, but he would get even with her.

At that moment, however, he needed to act as if everything was fine, thank you very much. The other girls deserved it.

"Oh, you know" he started, moving closer to the girls so the producer couldn't hear him very well. "I got a little shocked with my new look at first, but... well... I guess I can get used to it... Maybe I can even start to enjoy being Kim Hana!" he giggled with his hands over his mouth, as an authentic Korean girl, although in fact he wanted to hit himself for saying that.

"You kidding me!" Song Yeon said, openmouthed.

"Well... I always wanted to be a famous artist, and this is my big chance... *Our* big chance! And I've been thinking... What's the problem about being a pretty girl like you all?" he added, wanting to die.

"Oh, Alex, this is so sweet!" Choi Hyun said. "You can be sure that we already consider you one of the girls! And in fact, you look better than all of us. This is so amazing!"

She then hugged Alex, being careful not to crumple their clothes, and soon Jun Sunhwa and Song Yeon joined them.

Alex had already noticed that the girls also looked more beautiful than before, although they clearly hadn't been subjected to such extreme cosmetic procedures as him. Later, he would learn that virtually all K-Pop artists were subjected to some surgical interventions before their debuts. That was kind of a usual procedure there. The girls were also wearing dresses, though their outfits weren't as girly as Alex's.

"And how about you, Park Hara?" Jun Sunhwa said. "Won't you greet Kim Hana?"

"Of course!" Park Hara said, smiling. "It's just that I'm so impressed about her new look that I got speechless! Congratulations, sweetie" she said, hugging Alex too. "You look dazzling. And it's nice to know that you're okay about it. Maybe you were meant to be a girl all this time!"

"Yeah" Alex said, wanting to strangle her right there. "Who knows?"

That moment didn't last long because soon the producer approached again. "Okay, girls" he said. "It's time. I was told that everything is ready, and people are just waiting for you. Follow me."

Noticing the excitement of the girls, Alex even squealed and clapped along with them, determined not to let them realize how he was feeling for real. In any case, he really needed to get further into character at that moment. He needed to believe that he was Kim Hana that night. Otherwise, he knew that something terrible could happen...

END OF PART 51.3



#### PART 51.4

"Ladies and gentlemen, please welcome the 'Sweet Dolls'!"

Ahead of the girls, Alex went on stage, and was greeted by effusive applause and cheers. There were many spotlights pointed in their direction, not to mention the flashes of the numerous photographers, so he could barely see the audience. However, by the noise they were making, Alex was convinced that there were hundreds of people.

When all the girls were positioned correctly, they greeted the audience cutely, as they had rehearsed several times in the previous months, and made a curtsy, grabbing the edges of their dresses. The crowd clapped again, and Alex emulated his bandmates, smiling and waving to the people.

After that, the event's host asked the girls to present themselves. Being the group's leader, Alex knew he was supposed to speak first. Holding his microphone with trembling hands, he came forward a step.

"Hi all! My name is Kim Hana, and I'm the lead singer of 'Sweet Dolls'!" he said, trying hard to speak and act as a perfect girly Korean girl. He was so disturbed by everything that was happening that he was unable to think straight. As he spoke, he was sure that at any moment someone would point to him saying that he was an impostor.

"I'd like to say that we are delighted that you all were able to come here to meet us tonight" he continued, speaking Korean as fluently as if he actually had been born in that country. "We are overjoyed with everything that's going on, and it's so great to share it with so many people! We love all of you!" that last sentence hadn't been planned, but Alex thought it would be important for him to sound more convincing. The reaction was immediate – the audience cheered even more

enthusiastically. Then, Alex made a hand heart and blew a kiss. As much as he had hated all this, at least he felt sure that it was working.

After that, it was the time for the other girls to present themselves, and Alex could relax a bit. It didn't last long, though. At the end of the presentations, the host allowed the journalists to ask questions to the girls, most of them directed to Alex. He had to talk about the concept of the group's first album, what were the expectations regarding to the public, and their main influences.

Furthermore, as expected, there were many questions of personal nature, but Alex was vague on the answers, as he had been instructed to do. The other members also answered some questions, and after about twenty minutes the journalists were satisfied.

When the host was wrapping up the interview, someone from the audience asked the girls sing a song. Alex realized that the girls got as nervous as him at that. They really weren't expecting to sing that night. However, more and more people began to ask for it, so they had no choice. After seeing the resigned look of his bandmates, Alex began to sing the first verse of "Summer Love" a cappella.

At this point, the lighting became less intensive, so he was able to see the audience fully for first time. There were even more people than he had thought. They were sitting at tables, and were looking at him very closely. Alex felt desperate, but struggled to control himself. All he had to do was to sing... He had done this many times before when he led his former band... Sure, at that time he used to wear leather jackets and torn jeans instead of a pink dress and high heels, but still... he knew how to do that... He needed to believe it...

END OF PART 51.4

PART 51.5

Alex tried to forget all his worries and focus only on the music. It was what he needed to do. Pretty soon, the girls began to sing with him, and he felt more confident. They had improved a lot in the last few months – especially Park Hara, he was forced to admit.

The audience was very excited about the presentation. With all his experience playing in bands, Alex knew very well when the public was really enjoying a concert. Just then he realized how much he had missed it. The feeling of being on a stage, in front of a large audience... Oh, it was indescribable!

And they were just singing the song a cappella. It would be much better with the instrumental part and the dance. The public would get even more amazed... For a moment he wondered why the hell he was thinking about this. It wasn't like he was anxious to be a K-pop Idol, right?

He told himself that he had thought something like that just because he had missed performing in public so much. At the end of the song, the crowd stood up and applauded the "Sweet Dolls" during two minutes.

Back to the backstage, Alex and the girls celebrated the success of the presentation, and were also congratulated by the producer of the group.

"Well done, girls" the man said. "I knew you would do fine, but honestly I didn't think it would be that great! Such a fantastic debut!"

After that, he said the makeup artists would retouch their makeup quickly because they need to attend the cocktail prepared in their honor. Hearing this, Alex got stressed again. He knew that interacting with people face-to-face as a girl would be a tough task.

However, with no choice, twenty minutes later he was in the middle of the hall, being complimented by a bunch of people, including music producers, journalists, and even some K-pop Idols, like Hyolyn and Hyuna.

He couldn't believe how these girls were even more beautiful in person. He had dreamed of knowing them for so long... But in his fantasies he was still a man when this happened, and not Kim Hana. Now, they just saw him as another girl, which was very frustrating.

But worst of all was dealing with the male attention he received. He soon realized that Korean guys were more subtle than Americans while lusting after a girl, but still there were some men who looked at him as if he were a piece of meat, and even made a pass on him!

The feminized man felt very embarrassed and helpless, but he just smiled, not wanting to make a big scene. *In a year it will over and I will be rich*, he thought, trying to cheer himself up. Moreover, he was sure he wouldn't have to interact with men so often – the group would have little time for this kind of social event.

However, he would soon realize that this theory couldn't be more wrong. There would be a lot of "interaction" with guys in his future...

END OF PART 51.5

-----



#### PART 52.1

That night, after the cocktail, Alex and the girls went to the apartment where the feminized man and Park Hara lived, so they could celebrate their debut. Obviously, Alex wasn't feeling cheerful as the girls, but he did his best to hide it. What he really wanted was to be alone with Park Hara... he would have to wait, though.

In the following hours, they talked, laughed and danced, all while they drank a bottle of champagne. At the end, it was already very late, so Song Yeon, Choi Hyun, and Jun Sunhwa decided to sleep there too.

The next morning, everyone woke up with a little hangover, but they had no time to lose since the group had another commitment that morning. The three guests then went to their apartment to take a

bath and get ready. Park Hara went to her room as soon as they left, almost as if she was intentionally avoiding being alone with Alex.

Well, the feminized man knew she would have to get out of there at some point. In the meantime, he decided to get ready too. In the bathroom, when he got undressed, he could observe his new body in privacy for the first time. Once again he got shocked by what he was seeing. He thought he could never get used to it, even if he saw his reflection thousand times. The idea that he was that girl seemed inconceivable to him.

He remembered the time when he said to Park Hara that it was simply impossible to make him look like a girl. It seemed so far away now – almost as if it had happened in another life. And he was thoroughly wrong when he stated that, as it was clear now. Just for thinking of Hara Park, he felt an uncontrollable hatred again. But at the same time, he couldn't help but he felt a growing excitement seeing that perfect *Korean girl*, completely naked.

Without thinking, he began to massage his new boobs softly, and immediately his nipples got hard. Oh, it had never felt so good before... Those were real boobs, after all, as the doctors had explained. Unwittingly, Alex let out a girly moan, which made him even more aroused.

Then, one of his hands went down to his pussy, which was already completely soaked. It also seemed much more sensitive than before. When he stuck his finger in it, he had to control himself not to yell – he didn't want Park Hara to know what he was doing. So, when he thought of his tormentor again, his excitement slowly faded away. This wasn't the time to play with his body. He had an important issue to address...

END OF PART 52.1

-----



## PART 52.2

Once Park Hara left her bedroom, she saw Alex, or Kim Hana, sitting on the couch in the living room as a perfect lady, with his legs crossed at the knee. He was already fully dressed, and the girl was amazed by the ability the feminized man had acquired to put a girly outfit together completely by himself.

"Hey, sweetie" she said. "I've to say that you look great! I loved your necklace. It definitely suits you!"

"Thanks" Alex replied dryly.

"Is there something wrong?"

"Take a seat" Alex said.

"But, sweetie, you know we have an appointment in a little while and..."

"Yeah, I know, but this won't take long. I just want to know how you plotted all this that had happened to me."

"I don't understand what you mean, honey" Park Hara said, with a puzzled expression.

*Oh, she's so cynical!* Alex thought, felling a strong urge to punch her in the face right there.

"You know very well what I mean" Alex said, standing up. "The doctors... The record label's staff... All they believe that I always wanted to look like a Korean girl, although I have never said that."

"And do you think this is my fault?"

"Who else could be responsible for this? I know it was you, Park Hara. Stop being such a coward and at least assume what you did!"

"Do you really want to know the truth? Fine!" Park Hara said, approaching Alex with an angry expression. Involuntarily, the feminized man took a step back. The girl really knew how to look intimidating when she wanted, and her new short red hair only emphasized that somehow. Alex really felt vulnerable and helpless at that moment. He was much more feminine than Park Hara now, and he thought he was probably even weaker. That was a very scary realization.

"When we arrived here" she continued, "I learned that the record label wasn't interested in a girl with a western appearance, and they *assumed* that you were willing to undergo cosmetic surgery to look like an Asian girl. I didn't tell you this because I was afraid you could freak out, and we would be in trouble."

"They couldn't change my face and my body without my permission, Park Hara!"

"Of course not. But there was another clause in the contract that I hadn't read carefully before... It said that the record label could change the appearance of the group members so all they would have the right look... This is a common practice here, and no girl complains because they just make them look more beautiful. In your case, however..." at this point, Park Hara was no longer looking angry. Instead, she had a sad expression on her face, almost as if she were about to cry.

"Then, when I was informed that our plastic surgeries had been scheduled, I told our producer not to tell this to you because I wanted to do it myself. So, I hid this information from you, because I was sure that you would do something thoughtless, which you would regret later. I know this sounds crazy, but I was trying to protect you."

"Protect me? Really? Look at me, Park Hara! I look like a Korean girl!"

"I know, Alex. I promise I'll help to look like before when this is all over. I... I am so sorry... You're right. All this is my fault" she asserted, this time actually crying. "Could you forgive me?"

"How could I forgive you? You had no right to do this to me. I don't even know if you're being sincere now. You know what... I hate you, Park Hara!" Alex said, leaving the apartment and slamming the door behind him.

END OF PART 52.2



## PART 53

The following days were exhausting for "Sweet Dolls". They had to record the final version of the group's first single, "Sumer Love", besides the other songs that would be part of their EP. Also, they spent many hours rehearsing the choreography of song and, after a few days, they started singing and dancing at the same time, because they would need do this in the group presentations. Finally, they had more training on how to pose for photo shoots, and how to behave in the presence of fans and journalists.

Alex was the most demanded during this kind of training since he would need to assume a completely new identity. As a public person, he couldn't make any mistakes, no matter how small, or some journalist might suspect something, which could end in a disaster. The record label's staff seemed

determined to take from him any trace of his former identity as an American person and, without them knowing that, they were also removing the last vestiges of his manhood.

One of his instructors always said: "You have to think like Kim Hana. You have to act like Kim Hana. You have to *be* Kim Hana. This isn't an act. You are a twenty years old Korean girl. You've always been Kim Hana and, for all intents and purposes, you will *always* be. Do you understand me, young lady?"

"Yes, ma'am" Alex always replied, feeling distressed. "I'm Kim Hana, and I'm delighted for the opportunity to become a K-Pop Idol! I've dreamed about this all my life!"

He also had to tell Kim Hana's life story, or better, *his* life story, countless times. In addition to the basic information he already knew, his instructor created some *passages of life* that he had to memorize and repeat comprehensively. These stories were varied and detailed, covering from the time that *Kim Hana* was just a little girl, when she liked to play with her dolls, until the recent months, and even included the first time she was kissed by a boy, and how much she had loved it.

After a while, some of these stories, especially the mundane ones, began to mix with his true memories, and he was having a hard time to differentiate what was real or not.

With so much going on, he barely had time to rest. That was a strenuous routine, sure, but at least it had a good side: feeling so tired all the time, he didn't even have strength to think about his situation, which made his life easier.

Another good thing was that Alex wasn't living with Park Hara anymore. After their discussion, he said to his other bandmates that living with Park Hara was being a bit tough, and that he needed a change of scenery. He didn't want to make the girls worried, which could spoil their joy, so he repeated many times that nothing serious had happened – just a few problems of coexistence.

"Yes, we know she's a difficult person" Song Yeon said. "Being her roommate isn't an easy task, and you are in this situation for a long time."

"Yeah, I mean..." Alex started, not knowing how to continue. "I *love* her, just like I love you all, but sometimes she can so obsessive... This is a bit tiring."

After a brief discussion, Jun Sunhwa volunteered to be the new Park Hara's roommate, so Alex could live with Song Yeon and Choi Hyun. Obviously, Park Hara wasn't satisfied when she heard about that, but there wasn't much she could do – Alex had started to avoid her, and only talked to her when the other girls were around.

However, the feminized man would soon realize that sharing an apartment with Song Yeon and Choi Hyun wasn't as great as he had imagined...

END OF PART 53

-----



#### PART 54

"Look at that dress, Kim Hana! I think it will look perfect on you!" Choi Hyun said, clapping.

"Oh, yeah!" Song Yeon agreed. "You definitely need to try this!"

And then, the two girls dragged the feminized man inside the shop. They were strolling in the mall, something that had become usual since Alex had moved to the girls' apartment. Whenever they had some spare time, there they were, trying and buying countless dresses, blouses, skirts, high heels and lingerie.

Since Song Yeon and Choi Hyun were convinced that Alex wanted to try to be Kim Hana for real, they were determined to help him to dive even deeper into womanhood. They said that they couldn't be happier about *Kim Hana's* feelings, and they would help *her* to recover all the time *she* had lost pretending to be a guy.

"It'll be as if you were our little sis!" Choi Hyun said, giggling and hugging the feminized guy.

"That's true" Song Yeon said. "Now that you live with us, we'll teach you everything about being a girl. Isn't it great?"

Alex almost said he hadn't been sincere when he had stated he could start to enjoy being Kim Hana. However, seeing the happiness of the girls, he just couldn't do that.

It was weird, but Alex had created a very strong emotional bond with those girls. He concluded that this was due to the fact that they were the only people he could trust now. He was in a foreign country, looking like a completely different person (both in relation to gender and to nationality), and away from all his old friends – In other words, he had no one besides those girls.

So, he decided to play along, pretending he really wanted to be a girl. He would have to live as a female person for a year, anyway, so he thought he had nothing to lose. However, he soon realized that this wouldn't be so simple...

When he was living with Park Hara, he could lock himself in his bedroom at night, and usually the girl wouldn't bother him. Now, however, the situation was different: Song Yeon and Choi Hyun wanted to be by his side all the time. It didn't matter how tiring have been the day, they always wanted to do something at night. Besides shopping trips, it also included dinners at restaurants and frequent visits to the salon.

When they decided to stay at home, it wasn't any better. They always made Alex parade around wearing his new clothes and taught him a few makeup tricks, among other girly things. After that, they usually watched some Korean Drama in the bedroom of one of them. These TV shows were obviously aimed at the female audience, and initially Alex got bored watching this. After some time, however, he began to appreciate it a bit. The stories were silly, of course, but at least they distracted him.

They often slept together. Alex thought it was nice to share a bed with two beautiful Korean girls, but at the same time it was very frustrating. They saw him just as a female friend. There was no sexual tension between them, and the girls even changed clothes in front of him without any embarrassment. He just couldn't feel more emasculated...

END OF PART 54



#### PART 55.1

A few days later, Alex and the girls went to the set where the Music Video of "Summer Love" would be filmed. The feminized man had been fearful since he had received the script of the video, earlier that week. As the leader of the group, he was expected to play the main role, and it was bad... Very bad. However, as had become usual, he simply had no choice.

Once they arrived, they were welcomed by the director of the MV. The man was about thirty years old, had an asymmetrical haircut, and wore large glasses. The girls had previously been informed that the guy was a much sought director, who had already worked with big names of K-Pop. Alex was the first to greet him, saying that the "Sweet Dolls" were very pleased with the opportunity to work with him. The man returned the greeting, and said he was very excited about that project too. Lastly, he said that *Kim Hana* and the other girls looked lovely.

Alex blushed with shame. As much as that kind of compliment was becoming commonplace, he still felt humiliated every time it happened. Even though he looked like a Korean girl from head to toe, deep down he was still a man, so he shouldn't be called lovely, pretty, cute, and so on. However, true to his character once again, he just reacted like the other girls, giggling with hands over mouth and thanking the man.

They were then taken to a dressing room, where a team was already waiting to help them to get ready. Along the way, Alex realized that a young man with a small camera was following them, filming everything. He concluded that those recordings would be used in the making off of the MV. *Just great*, he thought grumpy, although anyone who looked at him at that moment would only see a smiling beautiful girl. Alex had learned to hide his true feelings so well that it disturbed him a lot.

Knowing that he was being filmed, he continued to act as a perfect girly girl, chatting happily with his bandmates, and making cute gestures to the camera. When they approached one of the scenarios that would be used in the MV, Alex squealed along with the other girls, and even said: "Oh, everything looks *sooo* perfect! Look at that big teddy bear... I think I'll take it when filming is over!"

"Oh, I don't think you can do that" said Choi Hyun, playfully.

"Are you sure?" Alex said, pouting, and then the other girls laughed and hugged him. *Oh, crap*, Alex thought. He wasn't even needing to try so hard to act as a proper sweet K-Pop Idol. He was sure that this whole scene would appear just precious in the making off – He knew this kind of video very well, since he had spent so many hours watching K-Pop Idols at the time he dreamed of dating one of them. Instead, now he was one of them, and pretty soon it would be registered in a MV – A perpetual record of his feminization. Even if he managed go back to being the guy he had been before, could he get over this trauma? How would he feel watching, or even just thinking about this video? These were difficult questions to answer...

END OF PART 55.1



## PART 55.2

While Alex was having his hair combed and his face made up for the first part of the recording, he was trying to focus on what he needed to do without thinking about how it would be humiliating for him. *C'mon, Alex*, he thought, trying to encourage himself. *You are a professional! You can do that! You just have to... Well... You just have to be Kim Hana!*

He knew he was able to do this. After so much training, he was more than ready to act as a Korean girl. The real problem was that he was afraid that at some point the character could overpower him in a way that he would lose his true self. Thinking coldly, he knew it was a silly fear. It just couldn't happen, right? Well, an inner voice reminded him of some circumstances which indicate that this was indeed possible...

At first, Alex had hated all the women's activities that he was compelled to do living with Song Yeon and Choi Hyun. However, after only a few days, it all began to seem just... normal. When they gathered to paint the nails of each other, read some women's magazines, or just make small talk, he

just didn't feel any distress. In fact, by being in the company of his new friends, he began to feel comfortable doing those things. When he realized this, he got terrified. What the hell was wrong with him? And that wasn't all...

They were watching Korean Dramas every night, and after some time Alex began to have strange dreams. First, he only dreamed about some of the scenes he had watched. But then he started dreaming that he was a character from one of those Dramas – an innocent and humble girl who had moved from a country town to a big city to try to attend college. Once there, she got a job in a big company as a secretary, and she soon fell in love with her powerful and wealthy boss, a man about twenty-five years of age who was the company's heir.

In his dreams, Alex acted and dressed exactly like this girl, although he still had his appearance. *Oh, Mr. Guo is so handsome, kind and smart!* He thought once, when he saw the charming man. *But obviously he will never get interested in a girl like me. He can surely have whatever woman he wants! Women much more beautiful and interesting than I am...* Even so, Alex (or Gang ChaeRin, the character he was in those dreams), kept feeling attracted to the man...

On the first night it happened, Alex woke desperate. That had been the worst nightmare of his life. How could he feel attracted to another man, even if it had been just a dream? That was wrong. He liked women. However, when he thought of Mr. Guo (or the actor who played the character), he felt a strange tingle go through your body. Was he getting... aroused? When he realized that his nipples were hard and his pussy was wet he knew that – however absurd it was – this was true. He thought he might go mad at that moment. That was just... too much for him. Was he turning gay or something? *No, this isn't possible*, he tried to convince himself. But then what was going on? He just didn't know the answer.

On the following night, Alex tried to stop watching that Drama, but this was impossible because the girls were really addicted to that story and they insisted that the feminized man watched it with them. To his distress, he continued to feel that weird excitement whenever Mr. Guo appeared on the screen, and kept having dreams about him. And it just got worse as the plot of the Drama progressed...

-----

### PART 55.3

In the following days, Alex's agony only got worse. In the Korean drama, Mr. Guo finally started to notice the qualities of Gang ChaeRin, his secretary, and apparently he also began to feel attracted to her. She wasn't the kind of woman he used to date, but she had a kind of appeal that made him instigated. And even using modest clothing and large glasses, he could see that she was a very beautiful woman who just needed a bit of confidence to show her beauty to the world.

The only problem was that Mr. Guo was already committed to marry the daughter of a very powerful man. However, he had recently realized that his fiancée was a frivolous and superficial woman, and he wasn't sure he really wanted to marry her anymore. His secretary looked like a much more interesting person now...

Yes, the whole story was very cliché and predictable, but still it continued to have a strong effect on poor Alex. He kept dreaming about it every night, and his dreams were becoming more and more intense. One night, he woke up suddenly and realized with horror that he was unconsciously fingering his pussy while he dreamed of Mr. Guo. He stopped it right away, but then he felt immensely frustrated. He was so aroused...

"What the hell is wrong with me?" he cried under his breath. His body desperately wanted him to continue to masturbate, but he managed to control his urges. It became more difficult every night.

Then, in certain Drama's episode, Mr. Guo finally asked Gang ChaeRin out after breaking with his fiancée. That night, Alex had a vivid dream of everything that happened in that episode. Once again, he was Gang ChaeRin.

*She* was feeling very excited because of Mr. Guo's invitation. She was in love with him, after all. However, at the same time, she was very apprehensive about the whole thing. She didn't know why a man like him had suddenly got interested in her, but she was sure that soon he would realize that it had been a mistake. She would definitely do something stupid that would mess the date up... She didn't even have a proper dress for the occasion!

But then, like in a cheesy fairy tale, an older secretary called Wang Su-Ji who had become her friend said she would help. The woman knew the owner of a clothing store who could lend a beautiful dress to Gang ChaeRin for one night.

In the shop, the two older women helped Gang ChaeRin get dressed, and also combed her hair and put makeup on her face. During the whole time, they kept saying that the young woman would look stunning, but Gang ChaeRin wasn't buying it – she was too insecure to believe that she could look beautiful. However, she would soon have a big surprise...

"Are you ready to see the new you?" Wang Su-Ji asked. "Oops... just one last detail. Give me your glasses."

And then, when *Gang ChaeRin* saw her reflection, she got flabbergasted...

END OF PART 55.3

-----



#### PART 55.4

As impressive as it was, Gang ChaeRin (or Alex, since he was reliving the scene in his dream) was really looking dazzling. She had never imagined that she could look so beautiful.

"So, what do you think?" asked Wang Su-Ji.

"I... I have no words. This is really me?"

"I told you, sweetie!" the older woman said. "All you needed was a nice dress and a bit of makeup. Then... *Voilà!* Now, when Mr. Guo sees you, I'm sure that he'll be so in love with you that he will ask you to marry him right away!" she giggled.

"Do you really think he'll like the way I look?" Gang ChaeRin asked.

"Oh, honey, didn't you see your reflection? I think you can stop playing the insecure girl now!"

"Hey!" Gang ChaeRin protested. I'm not playing..."

"I know, girl" Wang Su-Ji interrupted her smiling. "I was just teasing you. But as a said, you look fantastic! You don't need to worry about that."

After that, they went to Gang ChaeRin's place, where Mr. Guo would pick her up. The man arrived on time, and handed flowers to his date.

"You look absolutely gorgeous" he said, clearly amazed.

"Thank you" *the girl* said, blushing.

They went to a fancy restaurant, and Gang ChaeRin felt nervous again – she had never been in a place like that. However, Mr. Guo was so gentle and supportive that she soon began to get more comfortable. He really was the man she had always dreamed of... a real Prince Charming. Unlike what she had imagined, she didn't commit any stupid mistake and the man seemed to be more and more interested in her.

After dinner, he invited her to take a walk outdoor. They went to the beautiful Cheonggyecheon River, where couples loved to stroll in Seoul. The sky was starry, but it was starting to get cold. Then, Mr. Guo covered the girl's shoulders with his suit jacket. She thanked him, and he smiled. Oh, that smile was so bright... The girl thought she could spend hours looking at him...

"I have to say something, Gang ChaeRin" he started a little later. "I think I've never met a girl as beautiful, charming and special as you."

"Me?" she said surprised. "But I..."

Before she could finish, the man held her face tenderly and looked into her eyes. Knowing what was about to happen, Gang ChaeRin felt her knees trembling. She didn't even think about avoiding it, though – she wanted it more than anything.

Mr. Guo kissed her fondly. Oh, she felt so good... Soon, the kiss became deeper and more intense... It was exactly when Alex woke up, with his fingers stuck deep into his pussy. This time, he was so aroused that he just couldn't stop it. He kept masturbating faster and faster while he played with his boobs with his other hand. When he finally came, it was mind-blowing. He had to bite his pillow to muffle his cry of pleasure – the last thing he wanted was for the girls to hear what was going on...

As expected, the feminized man was feeling bad this since then. And that was also why he was so desperate that day of the filming. As the leader of the group, he would have the main role in the MV, which meant he would have to act alongside some guy, who would be his crush. If he was having erotic dreams about a man, how would he feel pretending he was the girlfriend of a guy in real life? He was really afraid to know the answer to this question...

END OF PART 55.4

-----



#### PART 56.1

"Okay, girl, you're ready" said one of the hairdressers, awakening Alex from his dark reveries.

"Thank you" he replied, nodding slightly as a good Korean girl. After that, he was helped to dress his first outfit.

There would be three shoots of the girls performing the choreography of the song, and in each one they would wear a different outfit. Then, they would film individual shots of the girls' faces in close-up while they pretended they were singing and made cute expressions. Finally, they would shoot the scenes of the MV's story. Yeah, that would be a very long day with lots of outfit changes.

Alex's first outfit was composed by a white sleeveless blouse, a cute flowery mini skirt and lilac heels. In addition, the women put earrings in his ears, some bracelets on his wrists and a pretty bow on his head.

He soon found his bandmates, and he saw that they were looking very beautiful too. Everybody was wearing white blouses but their skirts had different colors. The feminized man also noticed the guy with the small camera was around again, filming everything. This way, Alex was forced to keep acting as a happy girly girl while the group was heading to the set.

All scenarios were very feminine and cartoonish. The first one was like a dollhouse, with pink walls, lace curtains, and dolls and teddy bears.

"All right, girls" the director said. "Is everyone ready?"

"Yeah!" Alex and the girls said together, with a mixture of excitement and apprehension.

"Great" the man said. "Let's try a first take. I want all of you to stay calm, okay? There is no problem if someone makes a mistake. We can try again. You should just act naturally and try to have fun."

*Now this will be difficult*, Alex thought cynically. He definitely wasn't acting naturally and having fun at that moment – And if the director wanted that filming to be successful, that was the last thing the feminized man should try.

They then went to the center of the set while the light technician made some last adjustments. Being the leader of the group, Alex knew he was supposed to say one last word of encouragement to the girls. He had seen this countless times in backstage videos of K-Pop groups.

"Okay, girls!" he started. "We can do that! We all have worked very hard and we are ready! Fighting, Sweet Dolls!" he added, with a shrill voice and his fists raised up. Oh, he could only imagine how cute it would look in the making of.

In Korea, the term "fighting" (or hwaiting) had a different meaning in such context. It was used to motivate and cheer up people, as if one were saying "you will be good" or "you can do it", and was often said by Idols and fans. The girls repeated "fighting" in unison, and then took their positions. At the beginning of the choreography, they should be in circle with their heads down.

When the director authorized the start of filming, they heard the first chords of "Summer Love". The song started slow, with a beautiful melody played by a violin, and then suddenly it became fast-paced. When this happened, Alex and the girls jumped with their arms in "V" and their legs bent back and shouted "Yay", as perfect cheerleaders.

*This started... This is really happening*, Alex thought, just before emptying his mind and focusing on the choreography...

END OF PART 56.1



## PART 56.2

"That was amazing, girls!" said the director at the end of the first take of the MV. "You know, I've heard good things about you all, but I really didn't expect you to be that great. You don't seem to be newbies, at all. Your performance was perfect right on the first try! Such a fantastic job!"

The girls thanked the director feeling flattered and happy. Even Alex was pleased with those compliments. He didn't want to be there, sure, but he had worked hard for that moment, so he couldn't help but was proud to know he was doing a good job and that all the effort was paying off.

Next, they returned to backstage to dress the next outfit while the technical team arranged the next scenario. This time, Alex's outfit would be casual, consisting of a purple blouse that left his belly on display, a pair of white denim shorts and wedge heels.

When he returned to the set, he saw that this time they would dance in front of a beach scenario which also had a cartoon style. Once again, they were perfect. Alex could hardly believe how well he was being able to dance and act as a proper K-Pop Idol. One more time, he had mixed feelings about it. On the one hand, he was feeling humiliated for being forced to do that. However, he also felt satisfied because of his flawless performance. He was very confused because of this internal conflict...

Taking advantage of the scenario, the director also asked them to record some cute scenes, playing in the "sand" with a big ball, jumping and laughing, always doing a lot of *aegyo*.

After that, they filmed choreography for the last time with a new outfit. At the end of it, Alex shuddered as he remembered what was coming next. It was time to record the scenes of the MV's story...

He was returning to the backstage with Song Yeon when he heard the girl squealing at his side.

"What's wrong?" he asked surprised.

"Oh, look who just entered the studio!"

When Alex turned around, and saw who was there, he felt a dread he had never experienced before – not even when he had seen his body and face after the surgical procedure which had turned him into a Korean girl.

"H-how is that possible?" he stuttered.

"I know right?" Song Yeon said excitedly. "He must be someone so busy. I can't believe our record label managed to get him to take part in our MV!"

"Take part in our MV?" Alex gasped, even more desperate. "Do you think that's what he's doing here?"

"Of course, girl! What else could be? Oh, Kim Hana, you're so lucky! I'm really envying you now... You'll be able to act as his girlfriend! Isn't that like a dream?"

Oh, it was exactly like the dreams, or better, the nightmares Alex had been having. The one who had entered the studio was precisely the actor who played the role of Mr. Guo in the Drama he watched with the girls – the man he had thought of while he masturbated ferociously...

END OF PART 56.2

-----

### PART 56.3

Alex wanted more than anything to run to the backstage and lock himself in there. Maybe he should run away from the studio – or even from that country. However, he was too nervous to even take a step, and Song Yeon was holding his arm tightly, hoping for the handsome actor to come toward them.

She didn't have to wait too long. The actor was welcomed by Yu Joo-Hyun, the manager of "Sweet Girls", who soon began to cross the studio beside to the younger man. Alex watched in horror the men approaching. His mouth was dry and his heart was beating so hard that it was painful.

Song Yeon was aware of her friend's nervousness, but she concluded it was simply due to the fact that they were about to know that attractive and famous guy. Alex was acting as a Korean girl so well that his bandmate couldn't see him as anyone but Kim Hana. It was almost like she had forgotten who he had been before.

"Ladies" said the manager when they got in front of Alex and Song Yeon. "This is Byun Sehun, as I'm sure you already know. He kindly accepted our invitation to participate in the first MV of "Sweet Girls". I kept this information to myself so I could make a surprise to you."

"Nice to meet you, girls" Byun Sehun said, smiling and extending his hand.

Alex got even more distressed because of it. In the West, it could be normal for a man to shake hands or even kiss the cheek of a woman he had just met, but not in Korea. There, any kind of physical contact (especially between a man and a woman), however simple and innocent it may be, usually only happened when people had great intimacy.

Alex wasn't a Korean for real, sure, but he was so immersed in that character that he really felt like an anxious Korean girl seeing that hand extended before him. Blushing, the feminized man shook the much larger actor's hand.

Byun Sehun shook Alex's hand gently but firmly, while the feminized man did this as a woman, with his hand loose –the only way he could do it now with long nails. Alex was then able to observe the actor closely.

*Oh, He's even more handsome in person than on TV!* He thought. The man was very tall (even taller than Alex wearing heels), and it was possible to see that he had an athletic body, even though he was wearing a dress shirt; his face was manly and long, with a perfect nose, fleshy lips and piercing dark eyes; his hair was black and short and, it was perfectly combed.

*He's so perfect and charming... I wonder how it would feel to be kissed by him...* When Alex realized what he was thinking, he got even more shocked. Why that guy was messing with his mind that way?

"Nice to meet you too. I'm Song Yeon and this is Kim Hana" Alex's bandmate said, when she shook the man's hand, noticing that Alex seemed unable to say anything. "It's a great honor for us to know that you're going to participate in our MV, sir."

"It's my pleasure. I heard that you girls are going to be a big thing in K-Pop. Maybe you can help me get famous" he said, and Song Yeon laughed with her hands over her mouth. The joke hadn't been bad at all, taking into account that he already was one of the most famous people in the country. Still, Alex couldn't even afford a smile.

"And please" the man continued. "Don't call me sir. It makes me feel old. You can call me by my name. And how about your friend?" he said looking at Alex. "Has the cat got her tongue?"

"Please forgive my *unnie* Kim Hana, Sir... I mean, Byun Sehun. The thing is, we watch your show every night, and she's a big fan of yours. I even think that you're her type of man."

"What?!" Alex exclaimed when he realized what the girl had said, blushing furiously. "Oh, Song Yeon, why are you doing that to me?" he asked, with all the cuteness of a Korean girl. "Don't listen to her,

Byun Sehun... Well, I'm not suggesting you're bad looking... I think you're very handsome indeed... No, that's not what I wanted to say... Oh, I'm so confused now... And I'm making a fool of myself" the feminized man added, pouting and crossing his arms over his chest.

"That's okay, Kim Hana!" Byun Sehun, laughing. "If it makes you feel better, I have to say that I think you're very pretty too!"

Hearing this, Alex felt a shiver go through his whole body. And before he could control himself, he said excitedly: "Oh, really? It's so kind of you to say that, *Oppa!*"

"What did you just call him?" Song Yeon asked.

"Oh!" Alex exclaimed, realizing what he had said. "I'm so sorry! I'm not being able to think straight... And I'm making a fool of myself again!" he added, and everyone laughed.

To understand Alex's despair, a little context is necessary. When he was learning Korean, he soon noticed that harder than the language itself was learning the right way to address each person. In Korean, it was essential to show respect to those who had higher status (any person of greater age, employer, etc.). It wasn't just something polite to do, but one of the social bases of the country.

There were several titles for different people and contexts. *Oppa*, for example, could be used by a girl when referring to an older brother. However, depending on the intonation and situation, this could also be used by a girl to demonstrate she was interested in a guy – In other words, this was a kind of flirt, and a very significant one. So, a girl shouldn't refer to a man she barely knew that way.

And Alex had called this guy *Oppa* less than five minutes after meeting him. He just couldn't understand what was going on with him...

END OF PART 56.3



#### PART 56.4

With new outfits, the girls started to film the last scenes of the MV. Before that, Park Hara, Choi Hyun and Jun Sunhwa also had a moment to meet Byun Sehun, the actor. As expected, they loved the meeting too, and the man was very nice to them. However, from time to time, his eyes searched for Alex, and he could spend a lot of time watching the feminized man.

*Oh my gosh!* Alex thought. *I think he likes me!* In the face of such a finding, Alex felt excited and disgusted at the same time. He was so confused...

In the first scene, the girls were in a bedroom wearing pajamas and getting ready to go out, while they sang some parts of the song and made cute expressions and gestures. Next, they were walking on the beach sidewalk when they saw Byun Sehun. Following the script (as if it was needed), they got open-mouthed and thrilled to see that handsome guy, and he smiled at Alex when they crossed paths.

A little later, Alex and the guy met again *by chance* (in fact, the feminized man and the girls had sought the guy everywhere in some funny scenes), and the man asked the *girl* out.

For the last scene, Alex put on a romantic blue dress and silver high heels. Before the recording began, Byun Sehun said that Alex was looking stunning in that outfit.

"T-thank you" Alex stuttered, looking down. *Why the hell am I acting like a teenage girl in love? I am a man!*

But even he himself was having trouble believing in such a statement. With his head down, all he could see was his smooth, slender legs, and his delicate feet with pink toenails in a pair of girly high heels. He could also feel his long silky hair brushing against his back and neck, and the cherry taste of the lipstick and lipgloss on his lips. He screamed "girl" from head to foot – he had been transformed into the very personification of the Asian female beauty.

"You know what" Byun Sehun continued. "I don't want to scare you, but I have to say something... This scene we're about to shoot... I would love for this to happen in real life."

Alex almost cried *me too*, but he was able to control himself. "I... I..." he murmured, not knowing what to say next. Fortunately, someone came to save him...

"Okay, everyone" said the director. "Let's start filming this scene! We have to finish this soon so I can have dinner. I'm starving!"

They then began to film the final sequence of the MV. At the very end, there was another scene on the beach scenario, but this time with a different illumination simulating the night light, and a large fan simulating the sea breeze. Alex and Byun Sehun stood face to face, and the Korean man put his hands on *Kim Hana's* waist.

Alex thought this was very similar to what had happened in his dream, but it was even better. Oh, Byun Sehun's large hands wrapped his small waist almost completely... It felt so good... The actor then began moving his face closer to Alex's. The feminized man closed his eyes and opened his lips slightly, as if he really was about to be kissed.

Fortunately (or maybe not?), the kiss wouldn't really happen. According to the script, the scene would come to an end with their faces close together, but without a kiss. Thus, Alex was relieved but not surprised to hear the director say: "aaand cut!"

However, to his astonishment, he soon felt the man's soft lips... He was being kissed! He had already kissed a man before, back in America, when Park Hara had dragged him to a nightclub. But this time it was different. There were dozens of people watching the scene. Furthermore, a part of him was... enjoying it!

Alex didn't even try to resist. He just accepted the gentle kiss, and put his thin arms around the man's neck. That was so good...

And then, suddenly, he heard an enthusiastic round of applause. He broke the kiss and – still with his arms around the man's neck – looked around. The entire studio was looking at them and cheering. Just then the feminized man fully realized what he had done. Any chance of convincing some of his bandmates that he didn't want to be Kim Hana for real was gone.

He had been kissed by a guy in front of everyone and he hadn't protested – In fact, he had kissed the man back. He didn't know what to think. All that had gone too far...

END OF PART 56.4



ART 57

About a month later...

Alex was sleeping soundly when he heard a loud bang in his bedroom and then he felt something falling over him.

"Hey, what's going on here?" the feminized man asked, scared.

"Kim Hana, wake up. You have to wake up right now!" he heard Song Yeon screaming.

Only then he understood that the bang he had heard had been caused by Song Yeon and Choi Hyun practically busting the door of his bedroom down, and now the girls were jumping on him.

"Is there something wrong?" he asked.

"Something wrong? Oh no, silly girl!" Choi Hyun said. "It's fantastic! Come with us!"

They then dragged Alex out of his room, while the feminized man protested, saying that he was wearing only his nightgown. That was true. He was dressing a white nightie – with a cute pink bow at the neckline and lots of lace – which showed the curves of his increasingly feminine body.

He realized he was being taken to Choi Hyun's bedroom. Once there, they approached the girl's computer.

"Hey, if you just wanted to show me something on the internet, there is a computer in my room too!" Alex said.

"Yeah, but you only have a laptop so the screen isn't that big. It would be even better if we had a movie screen around here..." Song Yeon rambled.

"But what's so important that you want to show me in such a hurry?"

"Our MV, girl!" Choi Hyun said, hardly containing her enthusiasm.

"Hmm? I thought it would be published later this week."

"Yeah, we too" Song Yeon said. "But it seems that our record company decided to anticipate the release. This was posted last night at midnight. And you won't believe..."

"What?"

"Look at the number of views!"

When Alex looked at the computer screen, his jaw dropped. It already had more than five million views.

"What time is it? What time is it?" he asked anxiously. He was so stunned that apparently he had forgotten that he could have simply checked the time on the computer clock.

"It's a quarter past eight in the morning" Choi Hyun said.

"Oh my gosh! Our MV had more than five million views in just over eight hours. And during the night!"

"I know right!" Song Yeon said. "This is incredible!"

"Sooo amazing!" Alex exclaimed. Then, he started jumping and squealing with the girls, completely unaware of how girly he was acting. He was truly ecstatic. After so long dreaming of being a famous artist, it was finally happening – a song he had written and recorded had millions of views... With his old band, he had never achieved more than thirty thousand views.

Only then he remembered the circumstances surrounding this success. He had not achieved this as Alex, an American guy, but as Kim Hana, a cute and pretty Korean girl. However, he felt bad for only two seconds. At that moment, he was feeling so proud of himself that he didn't care he was being forced to wear skirts and had real boobs.

"How is that even possible?" he asked. "Our manager said they were expecting to reach three million views after a week. It's way better!"

"Yeah, but they also keep saying that there is a lot of hype about our group" Choi Hyun said. "I guess this is bigger than they had thought. Also, I'm sure that Byun Sehun's participation in the MV helped a lot. There are lots of comments saying how great you two looked together. Oh, but be warned that there are also some jealous girls who want to kill you" she giggled.

Alex felt a shiver as he heard the actor's name. For the past month he had avoided the guy in every possible way. This hadn't been easy, though. Byun Sehun had gotten Alex's phone number somehow (the feminized man suspected that some of the girls was behind it), and had called Alex out a few times.

Alex refused all invitations as politely as possible, saying he couldn't go out because the group was training all the time so they could be ready for their debut – which was true, after all. The good side of that even more intense training was that he and the girls had no time anymore to watch K-Dramas. Besides, he was so tired every night that he couldn't even have dreams. He just slept soundly, completely exhausted...

However, when he finally watched the MV, he felt a little aroused again. *Oh, Byun Sehun and I definitely look great together*, he thought. *We could make a cute couple...*

But then he shook his head, appalled by that thought. A little later, he managed to forget this idea and got happy again. The MV was just perfect and the whole group was looking great.

After that, he and the girls spent over an hour reading all the comments they could, and they were amazed by how much love they were receiving, as they used to say in Korea. Unfortunately, it couldn't last longer. They had to get ready because they had another training day ahead. They would perform on three TV shows that weekend, in addition to other commitments, so they had no time to lose.

*My life as a K-Pop Idol is about to start*, Alex thought, not sure about how he felt about it.

END OF PART 57



#### PART 58.1

Ten years before...

Alex was just a teenager when he first stepped onto a stage. Even after so many years, he could still remember very well all the nervousness and apprehension that he and his bandmates had felt on that occasion, before the presentation. The show would happen in a small club, during a festival of local amateur bands.

While they waited their turn to perform, Alex was feeling so sick that he even thought about running away from there. He knew he couldn't do that, though. That presentation would be the first step in a long journey until the realization of his greatest dream, which was to be a professional and famous musician.

In addition, his bandmates were counting on him. Alex was the founder and leader of the band. He had been the person who had motivated everyone during rehearsals, always trying to extract the best

from each member. He had promised to the guys that they would get there, and he couldn't disappoint them at that moment. He was feeling nervous, sure, but he knew his buddies were feeling the same way, and it was his duty to encourage them.

It was exactly what Alex did, and it worked pretty well. After a few words of encouragement, all of them were determined to make a *fucking* great show, as they claimed, following the *Rock 'n' Roll spirit*.

Minutes before going on stage, Alex checked his appearance one last time. He was wearing an old black T-shirt, a leather jacket, ripped jeans and a pair of faded sneakers, and his blond hair was completely disheveled. He was looking like a perfect rebel rocker, and this made him feel confident for the first time. He believed that he would do just great. He was sure that he was destined to this, after all...

The presentation, despite being the first one of the group, was a success. They all performed very well, and the public reacted enthusiastically. At the end, Alex thought he had never felt so alive and happy before. Oh, all that adrenaline... This was like a drug, and he was already completely addicted. He was even surer he wanted to do that for the rest of your life...

-----

"Okay, girls, you're going to get on the stage in five minutes!" announced Yu Joo-Hyun, the Sweet Dolls' manager. "Is everyone ready?"

"Yes, sir" they answered together, trying to sound convincing, although it was possible to see the fear on the face of each one.

"Good. I have to check something" he said while his cell phone was ringing, "but I'll be right back!"

The Sweet Dolls were in the backstage of a TV studio. Within minutes, the group would make its debut presentation on a popular TV show. At that moment, Alex couldn't help but he thought about the first show of his life. For all the years since then, he had dreamed of a chance like that. After so much effort and dedication, he was finally about to be a famous artist, but obviously this wasn't happening as he had imagined.

He checked his outfit, exactly as he had done years before. This time, instead of a black T-shirt, leather jacket and jeans, he was wearing a delicate white silk blouse with a cute bow, a red chiffon ruffle skirt, and Mary Jane heels. His old disheveled blonde hair now was jet black and long, and it was neatly combed. His face... well... he now had a face of a stunning Korean girl.

Despite all this, he couldn't help but he felt excited about what was about to happen. That would be the biggest presentation of his life. Millions of people would watch this on TV, not to mention the hundreds of people in the TV studio. Oh, he was so addicted to that adrenaline... He felt like before his first show, but this time it was a thousand times stronger. He almost screamed with excitement, but he obviously had to save his voice for the presentation.

Thinking about it, he remembered the opening song of his first show. It had been "Voodoo Child" by Jimi Hendrix. Now, he would sing "Summer Love", the girly song he had written months ago. However, not even this bothered him at that moment.

He then turned to the girls. Just like his old buddies, they are freaking out about the presentation. He then encouraged his bandmates, exactly as he had done before his first show. This time, however, instead of yelling he was sure they would make a *fucking* great show, he hugged each of them

affectionately, and whispered that he knew they would do well. At the end, all of them put their hands together and cried "Fighting, Sweet Dolls!"

When the group manager returned accompanied by a member of the show's production staff, Alex knew it was *showtime*...

END OF PART 58.1



PART 58.2

Once on stage with the girls, Alex felt excited, scared, embarrassed, motivated, all at once. It was a truly jumble of conflicting feelings. However, when "Summer Love" started to play, he again was able to focus on what he needed to do.

The audience was a little differently from what he was used to. In his old rock concerts, the audience was always standing, huddled in front of the stage, and people screamed, danced and jumped as if they were possessed – or very drunk, as they usually were.

In Korea, on the other hand, they were all seated, and there was no drink in sight (especially since it was a TV studio). However, this didn't mean that the public was less animated. When the "Sweet Dolls" appeared, they cheered and shouted deafeningly.

During the presentation, despite all his concentration, Alex could see how the audience reacted with even more excitement in certain parts of the song and choreography. In a specific dance step, for example, when the girls jumped and Alex blew a kiss, people almost went mad. This happened again when the feminized guy hit the high notes near the end of the song. He could hear countless people shouting his – or better, *her* name. There were also many posters with sayings like: "I Love U Kim Hana!" or "Kim Hana you're the best!"

*And this is just our debut*, he thought. *How will it be in six months?* He felt a chill thinking about it. Again, he was having mixed feelings. It was weird to pretend to be a girl in front of so many people (even if he was able to do it so well by now), but he couldn't deny that it was great to finally be a famous artist. And it was just the beginning... One thing was certain: that would be a crazy year.



## PART 59

The next few weeks were of intense work for Alex and the girls. Apparently, the whole Korea wanted a bit of the "Sweet Dolls", and between appearances in TV shows, interviews, concerts, photo shoots and fan meetings, they simply had no time to rest.

It was only then that Alex realized how tough the life of a K-Pop Idol was. Back in America, when he was just a guy who liked to admire the beauty of these cute, sexy, funny, and seemingly fragile girls, he had no idea of how hard they needed to work.

Despite the busy schedule, Alex's bandmates were still in a good mood. Their attitude made the feminized guy admire them even more – It didn't matter how hard the day was, they never complained or seemed slaughtered. On one occasion, for example, the group didn't sleep for more than thirty hours (having to go to three TV shows, two concerts, besides a long filming for an

advertising campaign), but even after all this time the girls were still smiling and playing with each other.

It became clear to Alex that they really were very dedicated and hardworking professionals, and more than that, they were fulfilling their greatest dream. He could see how much they were amazed with all that was happening, despite the restlessly work.

And Alex himself, even if he tried to deny it to himself sometimes, was having fun with all this too. Everyone wanted to hear him singing... Everyone wanted to get close to him (and some people could spend the whole day in a queue just to have the chance to take a selfie with him)... There was always a large audience in all their presentations, and people were always anxious and excited to see the group... He definitely was living a dream too, even if he was wearing skirts and high heels.

His new status as a famous person had a bad side too. As expected, *Kim Hana* was being forced to deal with a lot of male attention. Alex knew he had been turned into a gorgeous Korean girl, and all men, albeit discreetly most of the time, didn't lose the chance to lust after *her*.

Being an Idol, *Kim Hana* was supposed to handle this kind of attention. So, when a more daring guy said *she* was looking very well in certain outfit, or that *she* was the most beautiful woman in the world, while their eyes traveled all over Alex's feminized body, Alex simply smiled with his hands over his mouth, and thanked meekly.

Also, in Korean variety shows, it was a common practice to ask Idols what their *ideal type* was. When this happened for the first time with Alex, he was forced to improvise, and said: *I like witty and caring men, who treat me with respect and take care of me. Oh, and that helps if he's cute too!* He added, giggling shyly and covering his face.

But he soon realized that this wasn't enough in this kind of show. When they asked about the *ideal type*, they wanted a specific name.

"Would it be Byun Sehun?" the host asked maliciously. "It's possible to see a lot of chemistry between the two of you in the MV of "Sweet Girl"..."

Hearing this, Alex began to hyperventilate. What should he say?

"I... I t-think..." he stuttered.

"C'mon, Kim Hana!" the host insisted. "Our audience wants an answer!"

"Hmm... Yeah, I think I can say he's my ideal type" the feminized man stated, before he could think of anything else to say, blushing furiously. "But it didn't mean that..."

"Oh, this is interesting to know!" the host interrupted him, while the audience laughed at Alex's exasperation. "I'm sure you two would make a lovely couple!"

However, despite this kind of incident, Alex was beginning to believe that he would survive that year, and that, surprisingly, he would enjoy it, at least a bit (or even a lot).

What he didn't know was that pretty soon he would have a jarring surprise that would shake his confidence...

END OF PART 59



#### PART 60.1

A few days later, Alex began to feel an abdominal discomfort. At first, he didn't pay much attention to this. He thought he had probably just eaten something that made him ill, and so he would soon be feeling better. However, contrary to what he imagined, the discomfort worsened over time, and soon it turned into a persistent colic.

Even so, Alex didn't say anything to his bandmates – those girls worked hard all the time and never complained about pain. He didn't want to be the first one to do that. So he just started taking some painkillers, hoping that it would solve the problem. Unfortunately, this wouldn't be so simple...

One night, Alex was in so much pain that he couldn't sleep. Despite the three pills he had taken, he just couldn't make the pain go away. At some point, Choi Hyun got up to go to the bathroom, and

heard something strange coming from Alex's room. As she approached, she noticed it was the sound of someone crying. She then knocked on the door, worried.

"Kim Hana, what's wrong?" she asked.

"Huh? W-what?" Alex stuttered.

"I asked what's wrong."

"Why are you asking that? There's nothing wrong with me" he lied.

"Oh really? So why are you awake at this time... and crying? I'm coming in."

"No, no! Wait a minute so I..." Alex tried to dissuade her, but it was already too late.

When Choi Hyun entered the room, she saw that Alex was a mess. He was lying in a fetal position on the floor. His hair was totally disheveled and his eyes were swollen. It was clear that he had been crying for a long time, even though he was trying to hide this fact now.

"Oh my god, Kim Hana!" Choi Hyun exclaimed, desperate. "Tell me right now what's going on!"

"This is nothing" Alex said, although he was almost crying again. The pain was so strong... "I'm just feeling some abdominal pain."

"Honey, don't lie to me" Choi Hyun said, stroking Alex's hair. "How bad is it?"

"I already told you! This is nothing... aaargh" Alex blurted out when he felt a particularly strong contraction. "Fine! It's really, really bad!" he admitted, and then began to cry copiously, unable to control himself.

"Oh, Kim Hana" Choi Hyun said, hugging the feminized man, who snuggled in her lap like a child. "How long have you been feeling this way?"

"It started a week ago or so, but only recently it got so painful."

"A week? And why haven't you said anything about it to us before?"

"I didn't want to worry you girls about unimportant things... Our schedule is so full..." he sobbed. "We have so many commitments..."

"Sweetie, your health isn't an unimportant thing. In fact, it's more important than any commitment of our group. I'll take you to the hospital."

"No, please!"

"Why not?"

"Because they are going to keep me there until they find out what's wrong with me, and we have two presentations tomorrow. I can't harm our group this way, Choi Hyun! I'm sure this is nothing so serious."

"Kim Hana, your commitment is admirable, but..."

"Please, Choi Hyun! I have been taking a painkiller, but it isn't helping so much. Maybe you have something stronger to me?"

"Tell me exactly where it hurts and how this pain is."

The more Alex spoke, the more Choi Hyun got perplexed. The pain he was feeling was very similar to something she felt every month... But it wasn't possible, right?

"Look, honey" the girl started. "I still think we should go to the hospital, but I'll respect your will for tonight. I have some pills that I take when... well, when I feel severe pain. Let's see if it helps you. But if you're not feeling better tomorrow, we'll see a doctor right away. And do not try to lie to me! I know when you're not being honest."

END OF PART 60.1

-----

PART 60.2

"Here it is, sweetie" said Choi Hyun, handing a pill and a glass of water to Alex.

"Thanks" the feminized man said weakly, still feeling a lot of pain.

"I'm going to sleep here with you tonight to make sure you're okay."

"Thank you, Choi Hyun, but I don't think it is..."

"Shhh... This is not a suggestion, Kim Hana. I have to stay here for your own safety. Otherwise, we're going to the hospital right now!"

"Fine!" Alex said. "You can stay."

Choi Hyun helped Alex to lie down on the bed, covered him with a blanket, and then she lay down beside him. The girl then began stroking his hair again. "You'll be fine" she said, kissing his forehead. "I promise you."

Then, before Alex could stop himself, he snuggled up to her again, feeling happy by all the attention received. He was hugging a hot Korean girl while she stroked his hair, but even so he didn't feel horny. Instead, he felt protected and secure.

"You're such a great *unnie*, Choi Hyun" he said. "The best of all!"

That was another peculiar term of Korean language. In English, unnie meant older sister. However, in Korea, this term was also used when a younger girl addressed an older (but not much older) girl, even if they had no degree of kinship. In K-Pop world, the oldest girl in a girl group was called unnie by all the others, and she was kind of responsible for ensuring the wellbeing of her bandmates, even not being the official leader of the group.

In truth, Alex was the oldest member of the "Sweet Dolls", but not *Kim Hana*. Since he had assumed his new identity, for all intents and purposes Alex was only twenty years old, so Choi Hyun would be older than him. Because of this, he always called her unnie in public, but not when they were alone, since he knew it wasn't true.

That night, though, Alex really felt as if the girl was his unnie. This title had no special meaning for an American, obviously, but Alex was so immersed in Korean culture... and also very immersed in his new persona.

"You don't need to call me unnie at home, silly" Choi Hyun said.

"I know, but it just... feels right. The way you're taking care of me... I feel so grateful to you" and saying so, Alex started to cry again. This time, however, Choi Hyun knew he wasn't crying because of the pain... All this made that situation even stranger. That sudden change of mood and sensitivity, not to mention the abdominal cramps, were symptoms that Choi Hyun knew very well. But once again she thought that it wasn't possible. As much as Kim Hana had been turned into a perfect Korean girl, there were some things that could only happen to a biological female...

The next morning, Alex woke up feeling much better, although his mood was still unstable. Choi Hyun agreed that he didn't need to go to the hospital immediately, but she remained very puzzled about what was happening. Just out of concern, she told Alex to keep taking the pills for a few days, and he happily agreed.

"Okay, unnie!" he said, smiling broadly, just before hugging the girl with tears in his eyes again. "Thank you very much for your help!"

The following days were reasonably normal, so Choi Hyun went back to sleep in her own room. On the third night, however, not only her but also Song Yeon woke up with a desperate scream coming from Alex's room.

When the girls got there, they find the feminized man with wide eyes and a look of horror on his face.

"What's wrong, Kim Hana?" Choi Hyun asked.

"I... I am bleeding" Alex said.

"How is that possible?" Song Yeon asked. "Did you cut yourself or something?"

"I... I don't think so."

"And where is the blood? I don't see anything."

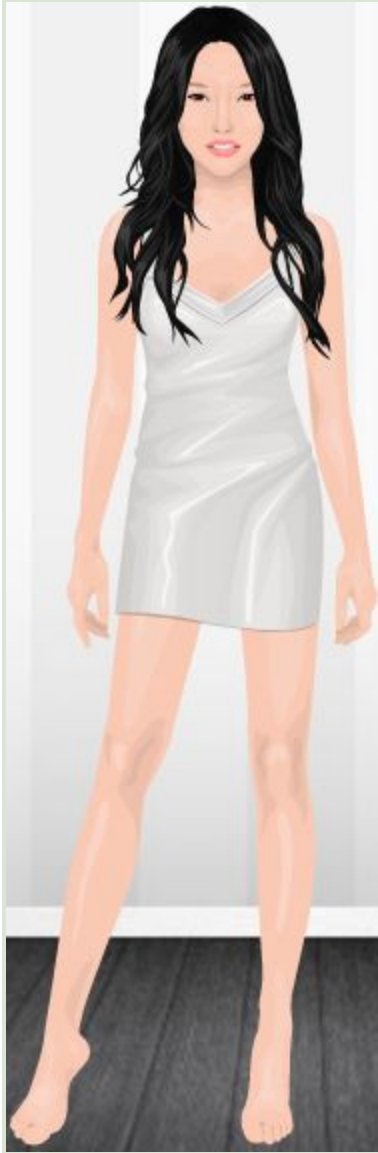
"This is coming from between my legs" Alex stated, in apparent shock.

Choi Hyun then approached and pulled the blanket that was on his legs. Then she saw: there was a huge blood stain.

"What's happening to me?" Alex whined.

"Well, Kim Hana" Choi Hyun started. "I don't know how, but I think you're having your first period. We have to see a doctor now. No discussion this time."

END OF PART 60.2



### PART 60.3

They arrived at the hospital about twenty minutes later. On the way, Choi Hyun called Dr. Yeob, Alex's doctor, saying that *Kim Hana* needed to see him urgently. The man promised that he would go to the hospital immediately to meet them.

Alex, accompanied by his bandmates, was immediately taken to a doctor's office. Two minutes later, Dr. Yeob appeared.

"Good night, Kim Hana" he said. "Your friend told me on the phone that you have a problem."

"Yes, doctor" Alex said through the tears. He was completely stunned and emotionally shaken by all that was going on. "I... I..." he just couldn't say that. Foolishly, he was thinking that this must be some kind of hallucination. However, if he said that, everything would become real – No, Alex's mind wasn't at its best. He then started crying even more intensely.

Seeing that, Choi Hyun went ahead and explained the issue. The doctor looked very surprised at first, but he soon regained his composure.

"Hmm..." he muttered, scratching his chin. "I need to examine Kim Hana to make sure what's happening. Therefore, I'd like to ask you two to leave the office for a moment" the doctor said to Choi Hyun and Song Yeon.

"No, doctor! Please, let them stay" Alex begged. "I need them here!"

"Are you sure this won't embarrass you? Okay, in that case your friends don't need to leave. Now, I'm going to call a nurse to help you to get ready for the exam."

Shortly after, Alex was wearing just a hospital gown. Then, he lay down on a gynecological examination chair.

"Okay, Kim Hana" Dr. Yeob said. "Now open your legs, please."

That was the last thing that the feminized man wanted to hear. However, he knew he had no choice – Dr. Yeob was the only one who could find out what was wrong with him.

"It's okay, sweetie" Choi Hyun said, holding Alex's hand. "Everything is going to be fine. You just have to do what the doctor is asking for. Can you do it?"

"Y-yes" Alex said. He then closed his eyes and spread his legs, feeling humiliated. He had never imagined that one day he would be in a gynecological chair while a doctor was examining his pussy... his pussy! This was so crazy... At least it was just a prosthetic vagina... *Or maybe not*, said a cruel inner voice. If this was the case, why on earth would he be having a period, as Choi Hyun had said?

In horror, Alex thought the doctor might have cut his cock and given him a real pussy, just like his boobs. *He would not do something like that*, Alex tried to convince himself, and then he felt a cold metal object penetrating the split between his legs. This definitely felt like a real vagina...

The examination didn't take more than five minutes, but for Alex it seemed to take forever. The situation wasn't only very humiliating, but it was also painful. He didn't believe he would have endured this without the support of the girls.

"All done" the doctor said at the end. "Now we need to talk, Kim Hana. Are you sure you want your friends to stay here?"

He added, and Alex shuddered.

END OF PART 60.3

-----

PART 60.4

"Yes, doctor" Alex started. "I want them to stay" whatever the doctor was about to say, he had a feeling that he would need support from his friends.

"Okay then" Dr. Yeob said. He then sat down at his desk, and asked Alex and the girls to sit in front of him. "First of all" he continued, "I have good news for you, Kim Hana. You're perfectly healthy. There's nothing to worry about."

"Oh, this is so nice to hear!" Song Yeon said. "We're so worried!"

Alex was also a bit relieved to hear the doctor's words. Still, he knew this couldn't be all. He had bled through his prosthetic vagina after feeling abdominal pain for several days – That wasn't an ordinary thing.

"But if so, why... well... all this happened to me?" the feminized man asked.

"This is what we need to discuss, miss" the doctor said, taking off his glasses. "I'm going to explain everything. You know, Kim Hana, from the beginning, I got very fascinated by your case. There are many transgenders in the world, of course, but you proved to be a singular individual since the start. You not only deeply wanted to be a woman, as it was clear since I met you, but you also wanted to look like... or rather... to be a Korean girl. Such an intriguing case!"

At this point, Song Yeon and Choi Hyun looked at each other astonished.

"Is that true, Kim Hana?" Song Yeon. "Have you always wanted to be a girl?"

Alex gulped. He was completely screwed. Just then he realized how stupid he had been when he asked the doctor to allow his bandmates to stay in the office. The girls didn't know he had lied about this to Dr. Yeob from the beginning – that had been a Park Hara's plan, after all.

"Yes, unnie" Alex said with downcast eyes. He knew he couldn't tell the truth to the girls now, in the presence of the doctor. If Dr. Yeob discovered that Alex had lied to him all this time, he could get furious, and reveal the feminized man's secret to the record label. And then, he would be in an even worse situation, and would drag the girls along with him into this mess. He would tell the truth to them later. For now, he needed to keep acting.

"I'm sorry for not telling you this before, it's just... Well, I was afraid of what you girls would think about me."

"Oh, sweetie, how can you think we wouldn't support you?" Song Yeon said, and then she and Choi Hyun hugged Alex.

"I don't know" he said. "I guess I was just being silly."

He knew that was a temporary lie, since he intended to tell the real story as soon as they left the hospital. Still, he was feeling as if he was trapping himself deeper and deeper. At every moment, it seemed increasingly difficult for him to regain his old self, and he didn't even know yet why he had bled. He felt suffocated and desperate. Then, he began to cry again...

END OF PART 60.4

-----

PART 60.5

"Wait a minute" Dr. Yeob snapped suddenly, causing Alex to jump from his chair. "If you two didn't know that *Kim Hana* wanted to be a woman all this time, for which reason you thought he had undergone that feminization process?"

Alex felt his heart stop for a moment. That was it. Dr. Yeob was suspecting something. And Choi Hyun's answer would just make him even more alarmed...

"We thought Kim Hana was doing it just to help our group... We weren't very close at the beginning, so we didn't know she really wanted to be a girl... But I suspect that Park Hara, with whom Kim Hana had a closer relationship, knew about it all this time..."

Dr. Yeob didn't say anything for a while. His expression was impassive so it was hard to know what he was thinking. And then, when the doctor finally reacted to that statement, Alex got very astonished. Whatever the feminized man was expecting Dr. Yeob to do, it was far from that – the man simply started to laugh so hard that in a short time he had tears in his eyes.

"Now this is something surprising!" he said, when he finally managed to control himself. "I'm sorry, ladies. I know this was unprofessional on my part, but I couldn't help it. There's no way someone would undergo such extreme surgical procedures just to help friends, and nobody could fake it so well for so long. I don't know how Kim Hana hid it from you, but since I met *her* it was very clear to me that she had *always* been a girl even though she was trapped in a male body. Very few times I met someone as feminine as her. Besides, of course, if what you've said were true, Kim Hana and you all would be in serious trouble."

The human mind is something fascinating. After hearing everything the doctor said, Song Yeon and Choi Hyun began to rationalize that all this should be true, just so they didn't seem like silly people. Even though Alex was a very manly man when they first saw him, while he was playing with his former band in a nightclub in America, their minds began to create false dichotomies, adapting certain memories in order to confirm that theory presented so incisively.

They began to "see" evidence that Alex, or Kim Hana, really had always been a girl stuck in a male body, thinking about certain events isolated from their original contexts. In addition, there was also the fact that now Kim Hana was looking, behaving and acting like a girl all the time, and, more important: Song Yeon and Choi Hyun really *wanted* to believe that this was true. They were very emotionally attached to Kim Hana, and didn't want her to go. If she were to be Alex again someday, even if theoretically she would still be the same person, this wouldn't be the same thing. In fact, it would be as if their friend had died.

This way, after just a few moments, Song Yeon and Choi Hyun were completely convinced that Alex, deep down, had always been Kim Hana, and was just waiting for an opportunity to free her true self. It was now clear as the day.

"You're right, doctor" Song Yeon said. "We were foolish because we didn't realize it before."

"We're sorry, Kim Hana" Choi Hyun said. "All this time pretending to be a man must have been so hard for you..."

"So true" Song Yeon continued. "How a delicate flower like you could be a guy? But we promise that we'll always support you in your transition from now on."

And then, the two girls hugged Alex again. This time, they were the ones who were crying. The feminized guy just didn't know what to do. On the one hand, he was feeling outraged by all he had heard. But on the other hand, his damn hormones were betraying him again: he was also feeling

touched by that show of affection and companionship of his friends, and he now knew that they were really believing that he had always wanted to be a girl, and this was something very important to them. How the hell would he tell the truth later? *I'll find a way*, he told himself.

But there was more. The doctor's words had also had an impact on him, especially because he was in such a vulnerable state of mind. *There's no way someone would undergo such extreme surgical procedures just to help friends... Nobody could fake it so well for so long... Since I met her it was very clear to me that she had always been a girl... Very few times I met someone as feminine as her...*

Could Dr. Yeob be right? Perhaps Alex, even not aware of that, had always been meant to be a girl? Maybe he even wanted it subconsciously, and that was why he could act like a woman so naturally? *No, this is absurd!* He told himself. *I'm a man!* He screamed inwardly, But it was so hard to believe in it at that moment.

"Okay, ladies" Dr. yeob said. "Now that we've cleared it all up, I think it's time for me to finally explain what's happening with Kim Hana's body."

END OF PART 60.5

-----

PART 60.6

Do you remember when we explained to you the process through which we gave you real breasts, Kim Hana?" Dr. Yeob asked.

"Yes" Alex Said. How the hell could he forget that, after all?

"Very well... But for your friends to know what's happening, I'll talk about it again, briefly. With the help of Dr. Koong, I inserted in your chest a compound made from stem cells, through small incisions, which is able to stimulate breasts development as occurs with cisgender girls during puberty. As I explained on that occasion, this procedure at first was intended to only help women who have lost breasts because of cancer, but the university responsible for the study soon realized that it could also be very useful for transgender people. That's why you now have breasts as real as those of any other woman."

Once again, Song Yeon and Choi Hyun looked at one another dumbfounded. They had no idea about any of that.

"This university was also working on another equally ambitious project" the doctor continued. "Again, this wasn't aimed to transsexuals at first, but to women who were born without the uterus or who had lost part of the female reproductive tract as result of some disease. Also using stem cells, the scientists found that they could solve this problem, making women's bodies develop new uteruses or even entire internal female reproductive systems. Then, after some time, they saw that this could also help transgender people, and the first tests were done. It was a complete success. To date, none of the dozens of people who have undergone this procedure had had any type of complication."

"So, did you decide to inject that thing into my body as well?" Alex asked, barely able to believe what was happening.

"Yes, lady" The doctor said, smiling. "We were certain that someone like you, who clearly wanted to be a *complete woman*, would love that. I'd like to do some more thorough exams, but since you're having your first period, it's safe to say that you are perfectly fine, and that the procedure worked very well. You now have an authentic female reproductive system, just like your friends."

Alex had thought that after his last hospital experience, he could never be so shocked again. Now he knew he was miserably wrong. Those words were echoing in his mind: *You now have an authentic female reproductive system, just like your friends*. This could only be a nightmare.

How could the doctors have done something like that to him without even letting him know? The feminized man felt a deep hatred. He thought about suing those people until he took out the last penny of them. However, he soon realized that this was a silly idea. To be able to do so, he would have to reveal to everyone that he was actually a man, and then it would be his turn to be sued, and by people far more powerful than him. Not to mention the fact that he was a public person now, and a story like that could spread all over the world. His life would be over. He would never have peace again anywhere. In short, he had no choice but keep the charade, at least for now.

"Can I ask you something, doctor?" Song Yeon started. "Is this procedure so simple? Do you just need to inject this compound into a male body and then it develops a uterus, ovaries, and everything else?"

"Oh, no!" Dr. Yeob said. "You also need to have the correct hormonal balance for this to work. Since Kim Hana is still in the middle of her hormone treatment, I didn't expect her body to develop a female reproductive system so quickly. I thought this would still take many months. I believe it happened because even before the start of the treatment, for some reason, she already had a high concentration of female hormones in her body, much larger than is normal in an originally male individual."

The poor feminized guy had never discovered the real reason for that. He had no idea that this was also Park Hara's fault, since the girl had made him take feminine hormones for a long time even before the trip to Korea.

"Oh, this is like if her body was already struggling to be feminine!" Choi Hyun said foolishly. "It already knew that Kim Hana should be a girl. So cute!"

"From a poetic point of view, I think we can say so..." Dr. Yeob said laughing.

Then, Alex mustered the courage to ask about the issue that was tormenting him now.

"Hmm... Doctor? How about my... hmm... my p-penis?" he asked, deeply embarrassed for talking about it in front of girls. "Is it still there?"

END OF PART 60.6

-----

PART 60.7

"Yes, it is still there" the doctor answered, and Alex tried to disguise the relief he felt upon hearing this. "I know you must be anxious to get rid of it, but you need to have a little more patience. As I explained before, the sex reassignment surgery is a complex procedure, and demands a long period of recovery. I'm sure you don't have so much free time right now."

"You're right, Dr. Yeob" Alex said, pretending he was feeling frustrated.

"However, I believe that at this point, due to the lack of use and the high concentration of female hormones in your body, your penis must be severely atrophied, just like your testicles. In fact, it's possible, or likely, I'd say, that you have already been chemically castrated."

Then, Alex got desperate again. What he wanted most was to ask if these damages were reversible, but he knew he couldn't. But this had to be possible... Those crazy people had somehow given him breasts and a uterus! They would certainly be able to fix his dick and balls. He simply had to believe it.

"Now, there are some other issues I need to discuss with you" the doctor continued. "Are you sure you want your friends to stay in the office?" Alex answered yes. He was convinced that it wouldn't make difference anymore.

"Okay. Since you start having periods, you need to see a gynecologist periodically to make sure that everything is alright. I know a great professional, and he's also aware of the study that led to the procedure to which you were subjected. He's simply perfect for your case, and he can also prescribe you suitable medications to relieve your menstrual cramps."

"Wait a minute" Alex exclaimed. "Do you mean this will happen again?"

Dr. Yeob and the girls couldn't help it but smiled at that question. "Of course, Kim Hana. Like all other women, you'll have periods every month" the doctor explained, as if he were addressing a frightened teenage girl.

It was obvious that Alex knew that women had periods every month. However, since he wasn't being able to think clearly, he still hadn't realized that he too would go through this now that he had a uterus.

"Every month?" he foolishly repeated.

"Yes, until you enter menopause, in about thirty years, I would say. And obviously, you won't have periods when you get pregnant."

"Pregnant?!" Alex exclaimed. His eyes got so wide that they about popped out of his head. "Can I get pregnant?"

"Since you've had your first period, it means that your female reproductive tract is working, so this is technically possible. However, this is not advisable at the moment because you are still in the middle of your hormone therapy and your body is not fully ready for it. Also, your prosthetic vagina can't dilate to allow the passage of the baby, which would prevent a normal delivery. This is one of the reasons why your gynecologist will also prescribe you a contraceptive. This way you can have sexual intercourse safely."

Was the doctor implying that Alex would want to have sex with men? Did that man really believe that he would let some guy fuck his fake pussy? Once again the feminized man felt outraged. But there were other major problems tormenting his mind at that moment... Alex would have periods every

month and he could give birth. This was just an inconceivable idea for his mind. He wasn't able to keep controlling himself... Not anymore.

"I don't want it" he said in despair. "I don't want to give birth and I don't want to have periods every month. It hurts so much! I don't want to have a uterus. Please take this off me!"

Alex started crying again and Choi Hyun hugged him.

Dr. Yeob got up and went to a corner of the office where there was a cabinet. He then returned a pill and filled a glass of water. "Take this" he said to Alex. "You'll feel better."

Alex took the pill without thinking and only then he remembered to ask what it was.

"This is just a mild calming medicine" the doctor answered, and then he sat down again. "Kim Hana, I know that even for someone like you, who wants so badly to be a girl, all this information can be difficult to digest at once. In addition, the hormonal change in your body is also making you more sensitive. But I assure you that, over time, you'll see that all this is good for you. The prospect of having periods every month may seem scary right now, but you'll get used to it, and it will make you feel even more like a woman. And then, someday, you can be a mother, which is the apex of femininity. I'm sure this idea will seem tempting to you someday."

Alex wanted to say no. That the last thing he wanted was to be a mother, but the calming was starting to take effect and he was feeling sleepy. Then, the doctor continued:

"Many people in our country sat that this is foolishness, but I think you also need psychological counseling. I'll forward you to a nice psychologist who is my friend. He'll help you deal with all of those changes. In addition, of course, the support of your friends is very important."

"Don't worry, doctor" Choi Hyun said. "We will support Kim Hana all the time!"

They then left the hospital, and nothing had happened as Alex wanted. He now knew that he had a female reproductive system, his penis and testicles were badly damaged, he had referrals to a gynecologist and a psychologist, who would surely think he really wanted to be a girl, just like Dr. Yeob and his friends. He simply couldn't see a way out of that situation...

END OF PART 60.7



#### PART 61

The following days, as usual, were very busy for the "Sweet Dolls." They had so many commitments that Alex had just time to think about his problems late at night, but even so he avoided doing so. His determination to tell the truth to Choi Hyun and Song Yeon had faded as soon as they had left the hospital.

That night, when they got home, he convinced himself that this wasn't the best time for that since he was physically and mentally exhausted. The next morning, he postponed this again because the day would be so busy, and so he continued putting off that conversation.

The truth was that Alex was a little afraid of the reaction of the girls upon hearing what he had to say. They seemed so happy now that they thought he really had always wanted to be a girl... But he knew this couldn't go on like this. He couldn't keep living distressed because of that lie just to satisfy his friends. *I just need one more day...* he was always saying to himself.

However, the more he postponed it, the more it became difficult. Excited by that *discovery*, the girls wanted to know everything about *Kim Hana's true feelings*, and Alex found himself saying how much he'd suffered all those years because he'd been forced to live like a guy, and how much he loved his new life as a girly and pretty Korean girl.

Choi Hyun had gone back to sleep with Alex, at least during those first days when he was still very sensitive. Alex once again said that this wasn't necessary, but the truth was that he enjoyed the company of his *unnie*. He really was feeling very fragile and vulnerable, and the girl always supported and pampered him, which he had to admit was very comforting.

The "Sweet Dolls" were becoming even more famous, becoming one of the most popular and beloved groups in Korea. Alex thought this was really crazy. Now he had one of the best known faces in that country, and wherever he went there was a legion of fans wanting to see him.

He had also learned that that world didn't work exactly as he had imagined. Previously, he had thought that K-Pop was just about a bunch of pretty and sweet girls who liked to sing and dance around, in a happy, harmonious and full of helpful people environment. But the truth was that often this was more like a war.

There were dozens, if not hundreds, of groups, and everyone was willing to do almost anything to get to the top – some people even acted unfairly to achieve such a goal. The rapid rise of the "Sweet Dolls" had aroused the envy of many people, and so the members were always being told to be very careful about what they were saying in public and how they acted. The Korean public wasn't exactly forgiving, and many careers had been ruined because of tiny mistakes.

The relationship of the public with the Idols was also different from what Alex had thought. The fans could be even more obsessive than in the West, wanting to know every little detail of the idols' life. In addition, the K-Pop audience, at least the most fanatical people, dealt with it almost as if it was football, and not music. Once they chose a group to support, it was all about this group, and some people could even campaign to try to harm some *rival*.

The "Sweet Dolls" were conquering one of the biggest fan bases of K-Pop, which was good, but also meant that the girls were being even more watched. That way, Alex needed to act and think even more like Kim Hana. In addition, the feminized man would be in a very tough situation because of this pretty soon...

END OF PART 61

-----



#### PART 62.1

"Ms. Kim Hana?" Alex heard *his name* being called and then he stood up. He looked at Choi Hyun one last time, and the girl smiled and encouraged him, saying *you can do that*. He went towards the person who had called him. The old man wasn't more than 5' 3" tall. His eyes were tiny and he had a small beard on his chin.

"Hmm... Hi, sir" Alex said. "I'm Kim Hana."

"Hello, Kim Hana" the man said, with a friendly smile. "I'm Dr. Wang, and it's a pleasure to finally meet you. Come in, please."

Dr. Wong was the psychologist recommended by Dr. Yeob, Alex's doctor. At first, the feminized man didn't want to attend that appointment, but Choi Hyun insisted that he needed to go, and promised she would go along to give him support.

Alex knew this would be a waste of time. He wasn't feeling well psychologically, true, but he couldn't tell the real cause of his distress to that man. However, once Choi Hyun got something into her head, it was impossible to make her change her mind. And now that Alex – due to his complete immersion in Korean culture and his emotional fragility – was respecting her authority as his *unnie*, he had no choice but to obey her.

He had already had his first appointment with his gynecologist a few days before, so he tried to console himself by thinking that this meeting couldn't be as bad and humiliating as that one...

At the office of Dr. Nam, the gynecologist, once again the feminized man was forced to lie down and open his legs so the man could insert a cold metallic object into his *pussy* to examine everything.

What most embarrassed Alex was the fact that that doctor also knew he had been born a man. Those men he barely knew, and who were very aware that he was supposed to be a male, treated him and talked to him as if he really was a girl.

Alex knew they were just being kind and ethical. Any true transgender girl would appreciate such a treatment, but he wasn't one of those girls. Obviously, that doctor had no way of knowing that. Alex not only had a completely feminine appearance now (he even had real breasts and a female reproductive system, after all!), but also walked, gesticulated, talked and behaved like a perfect girly girl. There was no way someone could know that he had ended up in this situation because of a series of unfortunate incidents, and not because he really wanted it.

In fact, even Alex's mind sometimes wondered if it was really true. Perhaps, although unconsciously, he had wanted to be a girl all the way, and had helped to make it happen... *No, it's not true!* He always said to himself after such thoughts, desperate. He had to fight it, no matter how hard it was.

At the end of that appointment, Dr. Nam prescribed Alex a contraceptive and some medications to ease his menstrual cramps. All that seemed so surreal and humiliating... That was why Alex was convinced that his meeting with the psychologist couldn't be so bad.

Dr. Wong's office was simple but cozy. In fact, it looked more like the living room of a cottage than a psychologist office. It had hardwood flooring with a light rug, and antique and rustic furniture. There was also a large window overlooking one of the beautiful and calm parks of Seoul.

"Would you like something to drink, miss?" Dr. Wong asked.

"Hmm... I'd like a glass of water, please" replied Alex, feeling uncomfortable.

"So, what would you like to talk about today?" the man asked, after handing Alex the water and pouring some coffee for himself.

"Excuse me?" Alex said, confused. "I thought it would be you who would ask me questions."

"Oh, I don't think this approach works very well. I'm here to help you, Kim Hana, but for my job to work, you have to want it. You need to trust me and want my help. So today, if you prefer, we don't need to talk about what brought you here. I know it's hard to share your biggest existential issues with a stranger."

"Really? Can we talk about everything?"

"Everything."

"Even about... Hmm... Flowers?!" Alex asked. Since he was looking at the park through the window of the office, it was the first thing that went through his head.

Dr. Wong smiled again. He had a comforting smile and a dreamy, ethereal aura.

"Sure" he finally said. "I love flowers. You should see the garden that my wife and I grow in our house!"

Alex thought that Dr. Wong was a strange man, but also trustworthy. He didn't know why, but maybe that meeting wasn't going to be useless, after all...

END OF PART 62.1

PART 62.2

Alex and Dr. Wong made small talk for some time. The psychologist had a calm, soft voice that was really nice to hear, and little by little Alex began to relax. Even so, there was something that was still bothered the feminized man, and at some point he couldn't hold it anymore.

"Thank you for calming me down, Doctor... But you know why I'm here, right?" he said.

"Excuse me?"

"The reason for why Dr. Yeob sent me here, sir."

"I see... Yes, I know, Kim Hana. But as I said..."

"So you must already be thinking that I am a freak" Alex said before he could control himself.

"Hmm... Do you think you're a freak?"

"I... I don't know... But what could people think about an American guy who turns into a Korean girl?" Alex couldn't believe he was saying that. He had just met that man... He then realized that he just needed to let it all out... He had kept all this distress to himself for a long time.

"I think you're looking at this situation from the wrong angle, Kim Hana."

"What you mean, sir?"

"You shouldn't be concerned about what other people think about you. What really matters is what you think about yourself. So, are you happy with your new appearance? Do you feel that you finally are the person you were meant to be? The real you? Oh, and by the way, I don't think you're a freak. If you knew what I hear in this office every day..."

Alex couldn't help it he laughed along with the man. He really was a nice person... But soon he got worried again. Dr. Wong wanted to know how the feminized man was feeling about his transformation...

As much as Alex thought that this man was someone kind and pleasant, he still thought that telling the truth was a terrible idea. There was the issue of confidentiality between patient and psychologist, sure, but Dr. Wong could judge that since Alex wasn't really a transsexual, he had committed the

crime of ideological falsehood by lying to the record label and everybody else, and then he wouldn't have to keep the contents of that conversation in secret.

Besides, Alex also thought that it would be very difficult to fool that man. He was someone trained to interpret people's thoughts and feelings... The feminized man then realized that it had been an even greater mistake to attend that appointment than he had imagined. What should he do? He needed some real feeling to convince Dr. Wong...

Alex looked at his delicate hands with perfectly manicured fingernails as he thought. They were on his lap, and so he could also see his hairless and elegant legs, fully exposed because of his cute short skirt. They were feminine that it was hard to believe they belonged to someone who was technically a man... Dr. Wong kept waiting, but Alex knew that he couldn't remain silent forever.

Then, suddenly, he had an idea. It was a little crazy, but he had no option. Alex just hoped it would be convincing enough...

END OF PART 62.2

-----



### PART 62.3

Alex decided to talk about his feminization trying to express his feelings about his dream of being a famous musician, and the crazy way in which he had achieved this, as a K-Pop Idol. This really was something very conflicting for him, so he thought it might convince Dr. Wong.

"Well, sir" he started. "This has always been my dream since I was a child, and it was often painful to live what I considered to be a lie. I was sure that I would be much happier when I could make my dream a reality."

"I see" Dr. Wong said, taking some notes on a small notepad. "Yes, it is very common that conflicts regarding gender identity manifest at a young age in individuals with some degree of transsexualism. Do you remember exactly how it started? Is there any special event that has been etched in your memory?"

At this point, Alex was forced to improvise. He was talking about his relationship to music, but Dr.Wong was obviously thinking he was talking about his desire to be a girl.

Alex had been sure that he wanted to be a musician since when he had listened to his father's old rock vinyl LPs, when he was still very young, so he decided to use that same story – and all the feelings tied to it – in a *slightly* modified version.

"Hmm... It started when I was still a little boy, I mean... I think that deeply I was already a little girl, although I still didn't know the difference..." oh, how he hated being forced to say it. "Anyway, one day I saw my mother's wonderful wardrobe, with all those beautiful, soft and colorful clothes, and I realized that I wanted to wear that type of clothing – more than that... I wanted to be a woman when I grew up... a cute and delicate woman, and not a man. This was just what I needed most in my life" Alex added, blushing Intensely. He felt like the biggest sissy ever.

"That's okay, Kim Hana" Dr. Wong said, noticing the discomfort of the feminized man. "It's perfectly fine to talk about your feelings to me. I'm here to help you, remember?"

"Yes, sir."

"Very good. Now, tell me, at this time, have you talked about this desire, or rather, need, to your parents or someone else?"

"No" Alex said with his eyes down. "I was afraid and ashamed... I didn't know what they might think."

Upon hearing this, Dr. Wong took notes for a considerable time. Alex wondered what he would be writing in that notebook.

"But you certainly couldn't ignore that need, right?" Dr. Wong asked. "How have you dealt with it?"

"Hmm... I... J-just" Alex stammered, thinking furiously about what to say next. "I used to try my mom's clothes when no one else was home. This... This was good for me during that time."

Once again, Alex felt humiliated for saying something like that. He had never tried his mother's clothes, and that idea had never even crossed his mind. That plan wasn't working exactly as he had imagined...

"I see. And since that time did you also have the urge to look like a Korean girl?"

Oh, that was a question that Alex had no idea how to answer...

END OF PART 62.3

-----

#### PART 62.4

"Umm... Not exactly" Alex started. "I think this just happened later, when I was a teenager, and I discovered K-Pop on internet... I always liked music, and I immediately got addicted to K-Pop. These girls were so girly and feminine... I... I just wanted to be one of them."

Again, Alex used an *alternate fact* to convince Dr. Wong. It was true that he had got fascinated with K-Pop girls when he first saw them, but he had never wanted to be one of them. In fact, back then, he

had a strong desire to go to the bed with a bunch of those girls, and it had been exactly this sexual fantasy which had led him to that crazy situation. Park Hara had taken advantage of his fetish very well to manipulate him, as he could see clearly now.

Ironically, Alex was now going to bed with a K-Pop Idol every night, but it was just Choi Hyun, his *unnie*, and they just slept, of course. Alex couldn't understand why, but he simply wasn't attracted to Choi Hyun, despite the fact that she was a very beautiful and hot girl. In fact, at that time, he couldn't feel attracted to any girl. However, when he thought of some guy like Byun Sehun, the actor who had kissed him, he could immediately feel his whole body getting hot, and his nipples becoming hard.

*It's just because this situation is confusing my mind, and these damn hormones are messing my body,* he told himself.

"I see" Dr. Wong said. "Yeah, I'm sure that K-Pop Idols can be a strong role model for someone who wants to be a girl. They are – or should I say *you girls* are? – Very feminine women. I hope you'll take that as a compliment, Kim Hana. I think you look like a perfect K-Pop Idol. I would never say that you were born an American boy if I didn't know better."

"Thank you, sir. I appreciate that" Alex lied. The last thing he needed was to hear once again how great and flawless he looked as a Korean girl.

"But tell me" Dr. Wong continued. "Are you sure your parents never suspected about your real feelings?"

Again, Alex didn't know what to say. He didn't know any real transgender person. Were people around them able to suspect something before they come out? He thought so or then Dr. Wong wouldn't be asking that.

"Umm... I think they might have been suspicious... but they never asked me about it directly."

"And why do you think so?"

"Well, I was a bit different from the other boys. A little... delicate, you know" Alex lied again. He hadn't been a delicate kid, quite the opposite, actually. But now that he was so deep in that web of lies, he had no choice but to keep going on. "My mother, knowing that, used to protect me, but my father wasn't so understanding about it. He scolded me a lot, saying that I should act like a real man."

Alex didn't know how he had been able to create all that so quickly. *I think I should write stories for a living,* he thought, uncomfortable for being forced to say all that.

"That's sad" Dr. Wong said. "Very, very sad... and... Did your father ever call you a freak?" he asked, and Alex got surprised. Now the psychologist was thinking that the feminized man had used this expression earlier because of some past trauma. Those lies were getting more and more complicated...

END OF PART 62.4

-----

PART 62.5

"Umm... Yeah, he called that a few times" Alex lied to the man one more time.

"And I see that this has had a strong impact on you... How is your relationship with your parents now that you have become Kim Hana?" Dr. Wong asked.

"Both of them died a few years. And my family has always been very small, so I don't have any close relative anymore."

"I'm sorry to hear that. But at least you have very dedicated friends now, right? I'm sure they are like a real family to you. Now, could you tell me how did your transformation begin?"

Alex then told the man how he had met Park Hara and the other girls, once again changing some facts to make the story believable. He said he had a music studio and that he had helped the girls to write and record a demo song, performing the lead voice.

In truth, he had done that just because he could hardly wait to go out with Park Hara, and he wanted to please the girl. However, he told Dr. Wong that it was because he had the secret desire to be one of those girls. Next, he said that after a while he revealed *the truth* to Park Hara, who said that could help him, making him look and act like a girl since he could already sing like one. This way, he could join the group.

Alex said that he obviously didn't think it was possible at first (which was veridical), but he soon saw that he was wrong, and he was very happy to see that he was starting to look like a girl (which was very far from true). He then continued the story explaining what had happened since his arrival in Korea.

In the end, the psychologist remained silent for some time, writing in his notepad.

"That was a fascinating narrative, Kim Hana" he finally said. "Thank you for trusting me enough to tell me all that. Now that you have revived everything that happened, I ask you again: How do you feel about your current condition?"

"It's... complicated, sir. I'm so happy to be looking like as a girl, as I've always dreamed, but sometimes... I feel like I'm a fraud. I feel like I shouldn't be doing what I'm doing because it's not who I really am. I don't know how to explain it better than that. I'm sorry."

One more time, Alex used his feelings as a K-Pop Idol to say that. He was truly happy for finally being a recognized artist, but most of the time he couldn't identify with the girly songs he was singing and, especially, with his female persona. It wasn't him who was a famous singer, but *Kim Hana*, the Korean girl he was pretending to be.

The psychologist made some more notes before saying: "Your feelings are understandable, Kim Hana. But what you need to remember is that the only person who can tell who you are for real is yourself. If you are happy with your current condition, the possible opinion of other people and your past experiences shouldn't be so important. You're not a fraud. Just try to remember that. Oh, but look at the time! Our time is over, Miss. We'll continue our conversation next week if that's good for you."

Alex thanked the psychologist and left the office. The feminized man had to admit that, despite a few tough moments, this hadn't been as bad as he had imagined.

Later that day, Dr. Wong's phone rang, and he saw that the person who wanted to talk to him was Dr. Yeob.

"Hello, my friend" the psychologist said. "How are you today?"

"I'm fine, Thank you. So, did you talk to Kim Hana, my patient, today?"

"Yes, I did."

"And how it was?"

"It was a pleasant meeting. She's such a lovely young woman, although she is so insecure."

"I see. So, I know it's still early for a definitive diagnosis, but what do you think of her case?"

"As you said, I need to meet her more times in order to understand her completely. But what I can say now is that there is no doubt that she is a transsexual, and that only living as a female she will be able to be happy and mentally healthy. However, the past was very hard on her, and I think she didn't tell me everything that happened yet, but I didn't press her or I could scare her. Because of this past, she doesn't feel comfortable as a female all the times. Sometimes she thinks she is not a *real woman* due those traumas."

"And what do you suggest?"

"I think it would be important to physically turn her into a full female as soon as possible. This way, she would be able to detach herself from her past more quickly, and live happily as the woman she always wanted to be. Over the years, she has desperately tried this. I think that's why she wanted to look like a Korean girl. This way, she could move further from her old self. But this hasn't been enough yet."

"I understand. She just needs one last surgery, you know. But the problem is that she has a very busy schedule, and she will need to rest for some time after the procedure. But I'll think of some solution, Wong. Kim Hana will be a complete girl very soon, as she is meant to be."

END OF PART 62.5



PART 63.1

### **About two months later...**

"Kim Hana, wake up, sweetie, or we'll be late."

"Oh, unnie, let me sleep some more!"

"You know you can't, silly. We have work to do."

With no choice, Alex sat up in bed, rubbing his eyes. Choi Hyun was right. They would have another busy day ahead. Looking at the cute Hello Kitty themed clock on his headboard (which he had received as a gift from a fan), Alex saw that it was six in the morning. Since they would need to leave home promptly at seven thirty, the feminized man knew he needed to hurry.

In the past, fifteen minutes was more than enough for him to get ready. However, now things were very different. When he was just a normal guy, he just had to take a quick shower, do something with

his hair in about ten seconds, put on the first shirt and pants he found in his wardrobe and he was ready for the day. But now that *he was a girl*, and worse yet, a girly idol, he had to be very careful about his image, which meant that he always had to present himself flawlessly, no matter where he was going.

This meant that he had to take a longer shower, using the right soap, shampoo and conditioner, to make your skin and hair soft and hydrated, and get that girly flowers scent which made Alex feel even more emasculated. Next, he needed a long time to fix his hair, and spread numerous creams and sunscreen on his body. Oh, not to mention the makeup, that also was a lot time consuming.

He also had to choose his outfit for the day, which was the Choi Hyun and Song Yeon's favorite part, so he always had a lot of help. This wasn't necessarily good for the poor Alex, though. The girls always chose for him the most feminine and cute outfit they could find, and then made him parade around the room to make sure that those were the right clothes.

Alex knew that they were just trying to be nice to him, teaching him the secrets of womanhood as they would have done to a younger sister – they truly believed that he wanted to be a girl, after all. Even so, he couldn't help it but he usually felt humiliated while he was there, being treated as a doll by the girls. And he couldn't understand why they always picked up the girliest outfit ...

But the truth, as he himself knew very well, was that any other choice wouldn't make such a big difference. His new wardrobe was extremely feminine. He could hardly find any pants or flats, and all the clothes were of delicate fabrics, with colors that *screamed girl*. And this was also a huge wardrobe. Alex was sure that none of his ex-girlfriends had so many clothes, and all of them would be very envious of his *fabulous wardrobe*, as Song Yeon used to call it.

At least he hardly had to spend any penny to buy his new outfits. Since he was a K-Pop Idol, he gained many clothes. The most prestigious clothing brands wanted *Kim Hana* to wear their creations. She was a role model for all Korean girls, after all...

Then, knowing that he had little time to do all this, Alex finally got up to face another day as Kim Hana...

## PART 63.1

-----

## PART 63.2

As Alex was getting up, he once again felt the soft fabric of his nightie against his hairless body. It had been a gift from Song Yeon. One day, she showed up at home after a quick walk to the mall and gave it to Alex, saying: "I saw this and had no choice but to buy this. It's so you!"

Mortified, Alex simply thanked her, saying that he had loved the gift.

"You're welcome, doll!" the girl said, excited. "I'm so glad you liked it, and I expect to see you wearing it tonight. Oh, and this came with a matching panties!"

Alex saw that she was right. There was a matching pink thong, so delicate that he thought it might fall apart in his hands. The nightie itself was one of the girliest things that the feminized man had even seen – which was amazing, considering his wardrobe.

It was light pink and made of silk, with two layers of ruffles in the hem, and another one in the neckline. There was also a black bow between the breasts' cups. It was so short that Alex was sure that as he walked his thong and his ass would be completely exposed. That would certainly be humiliating, but at least only Song Yeon and Choi Hyun would see him dressed that way.

*Well, I wonder what Byun Sehun would think if he saw me in this nightie,* Alex thought, before he could control himself. *Would he think I look sexy?* Alex rebuked himself for thinking something like that, but at the same time he couldn't help but she felt excited to imagine herself parading around in front of the actor wearing only that tiny piece of clothing.

*When will this nightmare come to an end?* He thought, with his nipples so hard they were sore.

Now, a few weeks later, sleeping in that nightgown had become commonplace for Alex. In fact, as much as he wanted to deny it to himself, he was loving the experience. It was so soft and comfy, and felt so good against his girly body... Alex wondered if he would ever get used to sleeping in his old pajamas again, from the time he *was* a guy.

In any case, in order for him to try this he first needed to be a man again, and it wouldn't happen that day. Resigned, Alex went to the bathroom to start his feminine's morning routine. That would be another important day for the Sweet Dolls, since they would record the group's second single. Alex loved recording studios so he thought that day wouldn't be so bad. Little did he know that he would have another nasty surprise there...

END OF PART 63.2

-----



### PART 63.3

"Have you finished your makeup yet?" Choi Hyun asked.

"Yeah, unnie" Alex said, checking his face one last time. His makeup was flawless, as it was usual now. After so much practice, he had learned to put makeup on his face like a professional. As he looked at his reflection, he once again was struck by the fact that this was him. All he could see was a beautiful female face, with slanted eyes, delicate nose and full lips – the perfect representation of Asian beauty.

Alex was using a mini blouse, white shorts, high heeled ankle boots, and cute earrings and necklace. Choi Hyun then handed a small pink purse to him saying that he was stunning.

"Oh, and I put some tampons in your purse" she said. "I know your period is coming."

"Thanks, unnie" Alex said, feeling terrible. This would already be his third period, but he still hadn't gotten used to this idea yet. Just the mention of it always made him shudder.

Alex, Choi Hyun and Song Yeon then left their apartment. On the street, there was already a car of the record label waiting to take *the girls* to the studio. Jun Sunhwa and Park Hara were already inside the vehicle, so all the members of the "Sweet Dolls" were present.

Alex greeted Sun Sunhwa affectionately, and tried to do the same with Park Hara, although it was sometimes difficult for him to disguise his true feelings for the girl –hatred and disgust. He had already understood that fighting with her wouldn't help him at all in that moment. In addition, they needed to pretend they were friends, at least in front of the cameras and in the presence of the other girls. However, he had never talked to her alone again, and he had no intention of doing so.

They arrived in the studio shortly after, and the producers were very happy to see the "Sweet Dolls" again, especially Alex. They said they had really liked the new song he had written.

A few weeks earlier, the label had informed the members that they had decided to anticipate the group's second single, in order to take advantage of all the hype around the girls. So the new song would be released just four months after "Summer Love", two months ahead of schedule. They then asked Alex to write another cute song, saying that they would save the sexy concept for the next comeback so as not to cause a shock in the group fanbase because of such a sudden change.

This time, the feminized guy wrote the song completely by himself, without the help of Park Hara to write the lyrics since he wasn't talking to her, and his Korean was already perfect, anyway.

The song was called *Alright*, and it was about a girl in love (who was sure that the guy liked her too), waiting for him to declare his love for her. Alex was impressed because he was able to write such a girly song in just an hour, without any difficulty.

Choi Hyun and Song Yeon were the first ones to listen to the song and they loved it. Then, they teased Alex saying that he had written it so easily because he had used his real feelings for Byun Sehun, the actor, as inspiration.

"Oh, that's not true!" Alex replied pouting, while the girls laughed. "You two shouldn't be so mean to me!"

The recording was going very well. Like last time, Alex was giving some suggestions to the producers to make the arrangement of the song even better, and he saw that all the girls had improved a lot as singers – especially Park Hara, he was forced to admit.

At the end, he approached the microphone to record his part. After just two takes, he was convinced that this had been good enough. His voice was even more feminine now. Anyone would find it impossible to believe that this belonged to a guy... However, the producers said that there was a problem.

"What's wrong?" Alex asked. "Did I sing some note out of tune?"

"Oh no, your singing was very nice!" One of the men said.

"So?"

"The problem was your pronunciation of the parts of the song in English..."



PART 63.4

"What do you mean?" Alex asked confused. "Is my English sounding so bad?"

"Oh, don't worry" the other producer said. "We see K-Pop Idols having trouble with English pronunciation all the time."

"But I'm very good in English! At least I thought so..."

"I see... you lived in United States for some time, right?"

Those producers had had contact with Alex before the plastic surgeries, so they knew that *Kim Hana* wasn't exactly one hundred percent Korean. For those professionals who had seen Alex before the surgeries, the label's management had said that she was an American Korean girl who had lived a few

years in America. This wasn't the official version presented to the public, so these employees, due contractual obligations, were prohibited from talking about it with other people.

"Yes, I lived there" Alex said. *For longer than you think*, he thought. *And my English pronunciation is perfect!* How could it not be? He was a native speaker, after all.

"Hmm... I'm sorry, Kim Hana, But it seems that your English has regressed a bit since you returned to Korea. Listen to the recording so you can see for yourself."

Alex then heard on the headphone his own voice. In the chorus of the song, he saw that the men were right. His English pronunciation was very bad, especially in the word "alright" which was repeated several times.

The Korean language doesn't have a sound similar to the "r" from English. For this reason, many Koreans find it difficult to pronounce it, saying "l" instead of "r". That was exactly what Alex was doing. Instead of "alright" he was saying something like "allight".

He couldn't understand how that was possible since he wasn't Korean for real! Only then he realized that he hadn't spoken or even thought in English for several months... But even so, he didn't believe it would be enough to make him forget a language he had spoken his entire life.

"Maybe I'm just a little rusty" he said. "Let me practice a little."

Everyone waited patiently as Alex tried to say a few sentences in English. But even the most basic ones, like my name is Kim Hana came out with great difficulty and a strong Korean accent. And worst of all, he couldn't remember anything slightly more complex than that.

"Oh, this is so frustrating!" he intended to say in English, but when he realized it he had said the sentence in Korean.

The feminized man felt even more trapped in his new life as Kim Hana, the girly K-Pop Idol. How could he ever be the old Alex again if he couldn't even speak English? Was that his fate? Would he be Kim Hana for the rest of his life?

Desperate, Alex began to cry. The girls quickly approached to comfort him.

"You don't need to cry, sweetie" Choi Hyun said.

"But, unnie" Alex whined, pouting. "I can't..."

"Now, now that's okay. We're going to help you. You've already helped us so much... Stop crying, doll. I want to see a smile on your pretty face."

That was very strange and ironic. Alex, who was the only native English speaker in the group, needed the guidance of the other girls to pronounce the words in English correctly – well, nearly so... As hard as he tried, he just couldn't say "alright" properly. After several attempts, the producers were satisfied with something that sounded "close". They said the audience would find her accent *cute*...

END OF PART 63.4

-----



#### PART 64

In his next meeting with Dr. Wong, the psychologist, Alex told what had happened in the studio. The feminized man was convinced that this couldn't be something normal, and that there was something wrong with his mind. Maybe everything that was happening was finally driving him crazy.

Dr. Wong, however, didn't seem so concerned about the fact that Alex was no longer able to speak English. After a few moments of reflection, he asked if *Kim Hana* had been in touch with Dr. Yeob recently. Alex didn't understand why the psychologist was asking this question at that moment. What was the relationship between this with his problem?

Still, he replied that he kept going to Dr. Yeob's office periodically, and that the doctor for some reason seemed very interested in the Sweet Dolls' schedule recently, always asking when they would have a few weeks off.

Alex thought that this was because he, as a doctor, believed that the girls needed some rest from their excruciating routine. But Dr. Wong knew that this wasn't the case. Dr. Yeob, his friend, was interested in Kim Hana's commitments for a very specific reason – He wanted to know when he would be able to perform the final procedure that would rip off the last vestige of Alex's masculinity forever.

"I don't think you should worry so much about what happened in the studio, young lady" the psychologist finally said.

"But, Sir... This isn't something that happens every day, right?"

"This is true. But in your case... I am sure that what is happening is that your subconscious is trying to get rid of the things that associate you with your old life, when you *pretended to be a man*. That way you can get even more immersed in your new persona, as a woman, like you always wanted."

"So, do you think I can't speak English anymore because *I'm a transsexual*? I don't know if I understand that, sir."

"This isn't simply because you're transsexual, Kim Hana, but because of everything that has happened in your life and the fact that you are still feeling insecure about your femininity" he said smiling. "In other words, I believe this is because you desperately want to be a woman, but you are still not convinced that you can, even if all the evidence points to the fact that this is already a reality. Your subconscious has associated your feminine condition with your Korean identity and is trying to erase your American identity. Obviously, this is okay if you want a second opinion. You can go to a neurologist, but I'm sure no CT scan will find something wrong in your mind."

On leaving Dr. Wong's office, Alex had a hard time digesting everything he had heard.

"Are you okay?" asked Choi Hyun, who was waiting for him at the reception.

"Yes, I think so, unnie."

He didn't know what to think. Had he forgotten how to speak English because he really wanted to be a girl? But that didn't make any sense. He had never thought about being a girl before... On the other hand, he now saw the girls only as friends and felt attracted to men.

Also, when he was performing as K-Pop Idol, he couldn't deny that he felt happy. This was such a good feeling... And the fact that he was acting and looking as a girl, while performing, seemed simply... normal. Could it be true that he had always wanted this life, and unconsciously collaborated to make it come true? Maybe that's why he had always been so obsessed with K-Pop Idols... But it couldn't be. He had signed a contract by mistake that had forced him to do all this. That was the truth.

*Well, no real man, no matter what, would accept to live as one of the girliest girls in the world, said an incisive internal voice. A real man would have preferred to be sued, and even to go to jail than be a female Idol. And this contract thing might have been a good excuse for you to believe that you were doing this because you had 'no choice'.*

Alex, more than ever, was really confused...

END OF PART 64



#### PART 65.1

A few days later, the "Sweet Dolls" returned to the filming set to record the MV of *Alright*. This time, Alex was much calmer and more relaxed than the last recording because he had read the script and saw that he wouldn't need to act alongside any man. It would be all about him and his bandmates.

This didn't mean, however, that the recording would be less girly and uncomfortable for someone who was pretending to be a girl. But the truth was that after so long living as Kim Hana, Alex no longer felt so humiliated while he was acting like an extremely feminine girl.

He didn't know if this really was a good thing, though... He was still tormented by Dr. Wong's theory about the fact that he had simply forgotten how to speak English. What if the psychologist was right? Maybe he was getting used to behave that way because he was finally accepting the fact that this was his true self...

*This is evident, silly girl,* said that annoying inner voice. *No man could get used to this life, and you know that very well. The truth is that you have never been a real man. Deep down you've always been this girl. She was just wanting the chance to come out...*

Like last time, they first filmed the choreography of the song three times, with different outfits. The third was the one that Alex least liked since this consisted of a short pink dress with many layers and ruffles and high heels. However, he was able to survive and when he watched the recording he saw that he looked flawless and also seemed to be having a great time. *Maybe I really was,* he thought, seeing his broad smile as he performed the last steps of the choreography. *Otherwise, I've to say that I'm such a great actor... Or actress!*

Next, they recorded the scenes of the MV's story. It was pretty simple actually, but even so it took many hours until it was finished. Since the song was about a girl who had a crush on a guy (and was sure that he liked her too), there were scenes of Alex in *his bedroom* waiting for a call from the guy, and then talking about the situation with his friends. There was also a sleepover scene where the girls played, laughed and daydreamed about the perfect guy wearing their cute pajamas... In the end, there was a scene where *Kim Hana's* phone finally rang, implying that *she* had gotten what *she* wanted so badly...

It was already night when they finished, and Alex and the other girls were relieved – that had really been a tiring day.

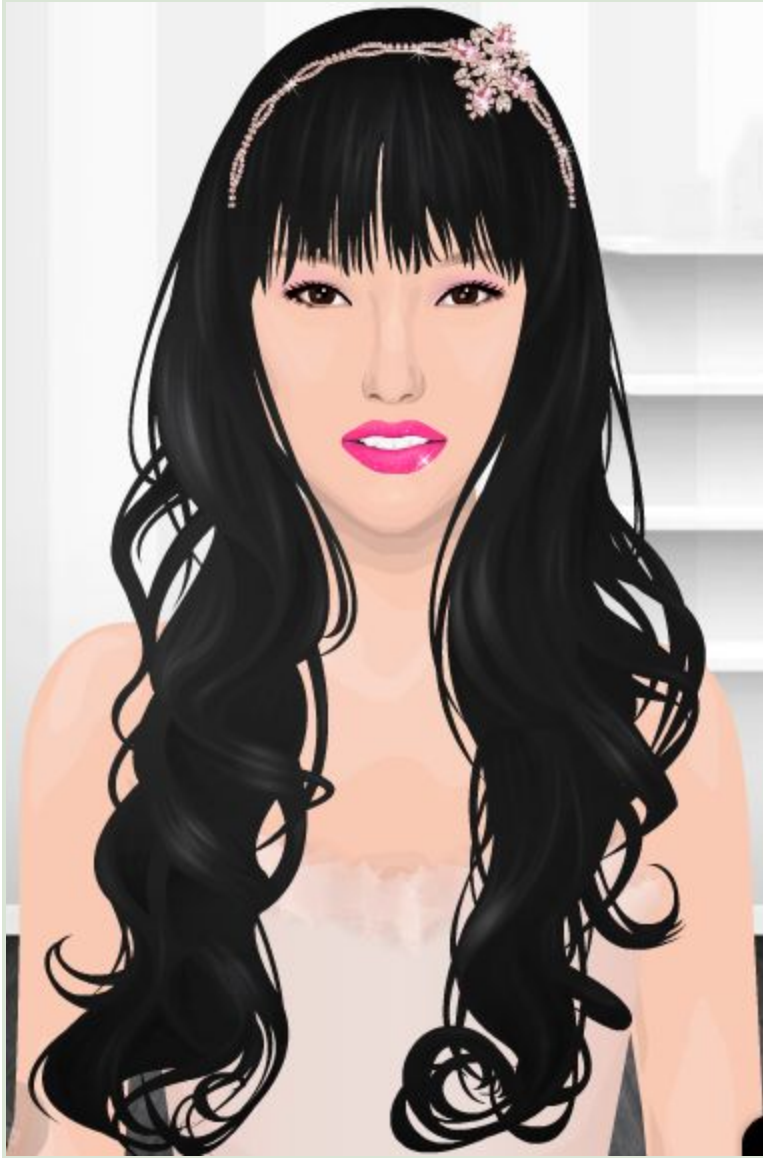
The director then said that they had done a great job, but that they would still need to shoot one last scene the next day.

"Hmm... I don't understand, sir" Alex said. "According to the script, we have already recorded all the planned scenes."

"That's true, but this one is a secret scene, so to speak. We didn't tell you about it because we want you girls to react even more naturally during the recording. But don't worry. I'm sure you'll enjoy this!"

Oh the man couldn't be more wrong. Alex was already hating it. Since he had become Kim Hana, when someone wanted to surprise him it had never been a good thing...

END OF PART 65.1



#### PART 65.2

The next day, Alex and the other girls had to wake up even earlier since their manager said that a car would pick them up at 6 am. Alex couldn't understand why it was necessary. Even though they needed more than an hour to get ready for the filming, the director had said they would only need to shoot one final scene.

When they finally were in the car, all of them sleepy and yawning from time to time, the feminized guy realized after some minutes that the vehicle was traveling a different route that day. In fact, they were going in a completely opposite direction. There was no way they were going to the filming set.

He said this to the producer, and the man smiled before saying: "It's okay. Today, you girls are going to get ready elsewhere, and it'll take longer. That's why you had to wake up earlier. When all of you are ready, we'll take you to the set."

Alex got even more worried to hear this, but he could see that his bandmates were excited and eager to find out where they were going. About half an hour later, they finally reached their destination.

They were on a leafy, quiet street, in front of a large commercial building with a sign where it was written: "Special Day".

"Oh, I know where we are!" Jun Sunhwa said, and Alex felt relieved. He really wanted to know this answer...

"My older sister had been here one day" the girl continued. "This place is a..."

"Shhh... Do not spoil the surprise, Jun Sunhwa" the manager said, and Alex got frustrated. He was so close to knowing...

Inside the building, the group was separated. Each member of the group was taken by an employee to a different place. Alex was guided by a petite young woman with a bob haircut and a broad smile, who was dressing a light purple uniform.

"We are really honored to have you here, Miss Kim Hana. We hope you enjoy the day."

"Hmm... Thanks. But could you tell me... What exactly is this place?" Alex asked, as he walked the corridors of that fancy and girly place.

"Oh, you'll understand soon, Miss" the girl said mysteriously.

Alex was taken to a locker room where he could take off his outfit and wear a robe. After that, he was taken to a room where a girl massaged his body. The feminized man had already been through it. Apparently that place was just a beauty salon, and he couldn't understand why there was such a mystery about it. A visit to a salon wasn't something new for any of the girls...

After the massage, Alex was taken to the main area. A facial mask was spread on his face while two girls worked on his nails. Next, with his vision still blocked, other women started working on his hair. It was taking longer than usual, and Alex asked what they were doing.

"Don't worry" said one of the hairdressers. "We are doing exactly what was requested and you'll look even more breathtaking when we're done! Just relax, please."

Now that Alex had a lot of experience in salons, he knew (even without seeing) that his hair was being not only cut but also curled. A little later, he could also feel some kind of adornment being fixed on his head. Whatever the girls were doing, it was something very elaborate.

When the mask was finally removed from his face, a girl immediately stood in front of him to work on his makeup, blocking his view of the mirror. By the products she was using on him, Alex knew that his makeup would be very dramatic. He really couldn't understand what was going on...

"Okay, Miss Kim Hana, you can look now" said one of the women. "I have to say that you look so fabulous!"

"Oh..." It was all that Alex was able to babble at the sight of his reflection.

END OF PART 65.2

-----



### PART 65.3

He was forced to admit that somehow he was looking even more beautiful and feminine than before. His hair was gorgeous, with long bangs almost reaching his eyes and big curls framing his perfectly made-up face.

"What do you think?" the hairdresser asked smiling.

"I... I..." Alex stammered stunned. "I think you girls did an amazing job... T-thank you very much!"

"Oh, you're welcome, sweetie! We're so glad you liked it! But I have to say that our work was pretty easy since you are naturally stunning! Now it's time for your dress!"

"My... my dress?"

"Yeah" she giggled. "I think that now I can tell you what we do here exactly. We are a spa and salon specialized in brides."

"What? But I'm not a bride!"

"I think you are, miss, or you wouldn't be here! And I assure you that you're going to be the most beautiful bride ever!"

Alex's mind was on the verge of collapse. What the hell was going on? He got so disturbed by the mention that he would be a bride that he lost the ability to think rationally. Horrifying images began to flash in his mind... Images of himself being forced to be the wife of some man... But they couldn't force him to do that, right?

Alex was so nervous that he hadn't yet thought of the simpler explanation. Maybe realizing that, the hairdresser told him, "Hmm... You know that this is only for your group's MV, don't you?"

"Oh, the MV! Yeah, of course I know!" Alex said, but the truth was that he felt immensely relieved.

"Good. Because for a moment you looked like... Nevermind... Anyway, your manager said he wanted you to feel like a real bride on her wedding day. He stated that this way footage would be more realistic. And your bandmates will be your bridesmaids. Isn't that great?"

"Sure!" Alex said pretending he was happy, and afraid to wonder if there would be a groom in the filming ...

The dress he would wear was extremely feminine and glamorous. It wasn't white, but light pink. Even so, it still looked like a wedding dress, and somehow it was even more girly. The dress had many layers, ruffles at the neckline, and lots of satin flowers on the lower part.

Alex shuddered at the thought that he would soon be wearing that dress, and even worse: it would be recorded and would have millions of views...

Half an hour later he finally was inside the dress. He had never imagined that putting on a wedding dress would be such a complex and time-consuming procedure. This was almost like wearing an armor, but instead of a gleaming and intimidating metal protection he was using that *dream dress* which made him look like a princess from a fairy tale. Beneath the dress, he was wearing pink lingerie, a lace corset and stockings. To complete the look, there was also a pair of four inch pump heels, chandelier earrings, and the tiara on his head.

Even after so long living like a girl and seeing his feminine reflection in the mirror every day, it was still a big shock for Alex. In the past, he would have done anything to marry that perfect Korean girl, but that girl was him... or *her*... For a moment – and this was very scary – Alex felt foolish when referring to himself with a male pronoun...

END OF PART 65.3

-----

PART 65.4

Once he was ready, Alex met his bandmates, who were dressed as his bridesmaids in lavender dresses. They all pointed out how great Alex was looking, and told him that they had never seen a prettier bride. Choi Hyun, who even seemed about to cry, told him, "Oh, look how my girl is grown up! She's a woman now. Ready for her marriage!"

"Don't be like that, unnie" Alex said, embarrassed. "You know that I'm dressed this way because of our MV..."

There was a white limousine waiting for the girls. This was a real challenge for Alex to get into the car dressing that huge dress. He only managed to do that with the help of his bandmates, and he had to sit very carefully not to crease the dress.

When they arrived at their destination, Alex saw that they weren't in the recording set, but actually in an elegant ballroom. The feminized man thought that when their manager said that he wanted it to seem as authentic as possible he wasn't kidding. In Korea, nowadays, few people still get married in religious temples, preferring this kind of place. So, that filming would be held where real marriages were celebrated!

The interior was very fancy, and it was neatly decorated with pink and white flower arrangements. The bridesmaids went directly to the altar, while Alex waited in the back of the hall. The place was crowded. There were some people Alex knew and others he had never seen in life who were probably extras.

The director of the MV then appeared and said that Alex looked very pretty. He handed a bouquet of flowers to the feminized man, and told him to walk slowly toward the altar when he heard the wedding march. He explained that this scene would be a dream of the protagonist of the MV (just before she wakes up and receives the phone call from her crush), and that Alex should act as if this were a real ceremony, as happy as if he were actually getting married.

Alex thought that if he acted naturally the director wouldn't like it - If that marriage were real, he would be running as fast as he could away from that place. Even so, he just told the man that he would do as requested.

When he heard the beginning of the song, he moved slowly through the ballroom. He was shaking from head to toe. Even if it was just an act, that situation made him very nervous. There he was, dressed like a bride walking towards the altar. Could there be a greater representation of femininity than that?

As he approached the altar, with a frozen smile on his face and under the watchful eye of all present, he saw that there really was a groom, and he was nobody else but Byun Sehun, the actor. "How surprising!" Alex thought cynically.

The guy was very classy in a white suit, and he was smiling broadly looking at *Kim Hana*.

*Oh, he looks really handsome!* Alex thought before he could control himself. *Would that be so bad if this marriage were real?*

*What the hell is wrong with me?* He wondered shortly after, in shock. But he couldn't get out of his head how great Byun Sehun was looking, and the passionate way in which the actor was looking at him. Was he just acting or was that a real feeling? *Well, he had asked me out several times...*

Upon arriving at the altar, Alex handed the bouquet to Choi Hyun, and approached Byun Sehun. The guy held out his hand to Alex and said, "I'm such a lucky man! Who in the world has a more beautiful bride?"

Alex couldn't help it but blushed, lowering his eyes. "Thank you" he whispered, extremely confused, while Byun Sehun held his delicate hands. There was even an actor to celebrate the wedding (or was he a real minister?) making the situation frighteningly believable. At the end, Byun Sehun and *Kim Hana* accepted each other as husband and wife, and then Byun Sehun kissed Alex affectionately. Alex was lost in a sea of mixed feelings...

END OF PART 65.4



PART 66

When the Sweet Dolls started promoting their second single, Alex once again didn't have time to think of anything in the midst of that crazy routine. After participating in TV and radio shows, concerts, photoshoots, fan meetings, among many other commitments, all he could do upon arriving home was to sleep soundly for a few hours before starting all over again.

Just like the first single, "Alright" was doing pretty great. The song soon reached the first place of the charts, surpassing songs from other more experienced groups, and the MV once again had millions of views still within the first hours after launch. When Alex saw the final version of the video, he was struck by how convincing the wedding scene looked. It was amazing the chemistry between this girl and Byun Sehun. The only problem was that *this girl* was him...

The public also noticed this, of course, and one more time Alex was bombarded with several questions about his relationship with the actor, and he always said, blushing furiously, that they were just good friends. For some reason, however, no one seemed to believe it...

A few days later, Alex was called by the group manager for a private meeting. Upon entering the office, he was a little apprehensive since this had never happened before.

"Hello, sir. Did you want to see me?"

"Yes, Kim Hana, take a sit, please" said Yu Joo-Hyon, the manager. "Would you like something to drink?"

"No, I'm okay, sir. Thanks."

"Fine. So let's get right to the point. You don't need to look so worried, girl. I think you'll like what I have to say."

"Hmm... That's nice to know!" the feminized guy said, although he wasn't so sure. If this was something that *Kim Hana* might like, that meant it wouldn't be so good for *Alex*.

"We have a very peculiar situation in our hands, you know. Both the general public and the fanbase of the Sweet Dolls seem to appreciate the interactions between you and Byun Sehun. This was already clear a few weeks ago, but after the release of the group's latest MV this became even more evident. People are, as the younger generations say, *shipping* you two."

"A-are they?" Alex said, even though he knew very well that this was true. He didn't like the direction of that conversation at all.

"Yes, and I think you're very lucky because of that. Many idols have to spend their whole careers without any real relationship because the fans could get jealous and angry. As I think you may have already noticed, K-Pop fans can be very possessive. In your case, however, many of your fans, as well as fans of Byun Sehun, are cheering... I would say demanding... you two to become a couple. This way, I'd like to say that you're allowed to date him."

"I... I don't think this is a good idea, sir" Alex said in shock. He couldn't believe he was having this conversation.

"Why not?" Yu Joo-Hyon asked, surprised. "I think any idol would love to hear such a thing. And Byun Sehun is very popular among young women, and others not so young too... Don't you think he's attractive? Looking at you two together it seems clear that you like him. What's the problem, Kim Hana? Did he treat you badly recently? Because if he did something to you I'll go to his agency and..."

"No!" Alex said hastily. He didn't want to harm Byun Sehun for no reason. "He had always been a gentleman with me. The problem is..." he didn't know what to say. He couldn't tell the truth since his manager didn't know that Alex had actually been born a guy. And to this man it seemed inconceivable the idea that *Kim Hana* didn't like Byun Sehun. Well, actually the whole country seemed to think the same.

*Well, you're not so dumb to believe that they're all wrong, silly girl,* said that annoying inner voice. *It's obvious that you like that hot and sweet guy... How couldn't you? Maybe you even love him...*

"I think he's a very nice person, sir, and handsome too" Alex said. "But now I would like to focus on my career. I don't think this is the right time for a relationship."

"I see... You really are a very professional girl, Kim Hana. But in this case, consider this as another professional commitment. I know Byun Sehun has already made some public statements implying that he likes you. If the public thinks that you are snubbing him, it will hurt your image as well as the image of the Sweet Dolls. He's very popular, you know... In addition, both he and you can get even more famous with this relationship. You guys will be the country's favorite couple. This doesn't even have to be real *at first* if you don't want... You two just need to be seen going out together and so on... It's not like you could kiss in public. You know this is not well seen in Korea. But I'm sure you'll thank me for that pretty soon, Kim Hana. I'm really, really sure... "

END OF PART 66



### **Two weeks later...**

Alex checked his reflection in the mirror one more time to make sure he was flawless. What he saw was the image of a stunning woman that any guy would love to date. *She* was wearing a golden dress with floral pattern, a large black bow on the waist, and a round skirt that ended above *her* knees, revealing *her* fantastic legs, which looked even more elegant because of the 4 inch peep pumps *she* was wearing.

*Her* face, which had a hypnotizing beauty, was perfectly made-up and was framed by *her* dazzling black hair cascading down her shoulders. *And this girl is me*, Alex thought for the thousandth time. This might be starting to sound repetitive even to him, but he couldn't help but get surprised every time he looked at himself in the mirror.

From a male perspective, Alex knew he was looking perfect. However, thinking as Kim Hana – and now Alex had a lot of experience doing that – he knew he should apply a new layer of lipstick and correct his mascara a little bit. He wasn't only living as a girl for so long, but his image was also a fundamental part of his work. Thus, he was more than trained to identify and correct this type of issue.

That night, though, he wasn't getting all dolled up to attend a professional commitment, oh no. That night *Kim Hana* had a date, and at the thought of it he once again became very distressed. *Well, in a way I can say that this is a professional commitment*, he thought. He wouldn't have accepted the invitation had it not been for the good of the "Sweet Dolls", after all.

*Oh, really?* Said that inner voice that seemed determined to convince him that he was destined to be a girl and that deep down he wanted it. *Is that why you want to apply a new layer of lipstick? Because of a "professional commitment"? I think you want to make your lips appear even more kissable to seduce Byun Sehun... You would love to be kissed by him late at night, wouldn't you?*

"No!" Alex said shaking his head. He was determined to make it clear to the actor that he wasn't ready for it yet. If Byun Sehun really wanted to date *Kim Hana*, he would have to be patient. *She* wasn't an easy girl. Alex hoped to gain time this way until he found a better solution... But the truth was that he was afraid of what might happen that night. Not only because of the actor... He was also afraid of himself...

He felt very attracted to Byun Sehun and it was undeniable. From time to time, in the middle of the night, he still masturbated thinking about that guy before he could stop himself... Would he be able to control his urges all night long? Alex's thoughts were interrupted by the sound of the bell of his apartment. Shortly after, Choi Hyun appeared in the bedroom saying that Kim Hana's date had arrived.

"I... I'm already going" He said, feeling a shiver.

END OF PART 67.1

-----



#### PART 67.2

When Alex arrived in the living room, he saw that Byun Sehun was there in the company of Song Yeon. The guy was wearing a navy blue dress shirt and white pants. *It's undeniable that he is handsome... And this night he looks so yummy!* Alex thought, and immediately got shocked.

Byun Sehun approached smiling... Oh, that smile was so warm and bright... It was enough to make Alex forget his own name... and even his true gender! The guy then offered a bouquet of white and pink roses to the feminized man.

"Oh they are so beautiful!" Alex said, with his heart racing.

"Not as much as you" the actor said. "I really can't believe how stunning *my wife* is tonight!"

"Wife?" Alex exclaimed with a cute, high-pitched squeal. Byun Sehun was clearly making reference to the fact that they had "got married" in the last MV of the Sweet Dolls. This might have been a clever

joke, but definitely not so hard to get. The poor Alex, however, was as nervous as a teenage girl on her first date. Thus, Choi Hyun had to explain the reference to the feminized man.

"Oh, now I see!" Alex said giggling and hiding his blushed face with one hand, in a typical gesture of a Korean girl. "Thank you very much. You're so kind."

*She looks even cuter when she's embarrassed,* Byun Sehun thought. He could hardly wait to be alone with her...

"Please, forgive our baby girl!" Song Yeon said, playfully. "Usually, she's not like that. She just gets so nervous in your presence because she really likes you!"

"Oh, Song Yeon-Unnie, don't be so mean to me!" Alex complained, blushing even more intensely, while the others laughed.

"That's okay, Kim Hana" Byun Sehun said. "I have to admit that I also get nervous in your presence."

"Do you?" Alex asked, surprised.

"Of course! How could I not be nervous in front of a girl as beautiful, funny and interesting as you?"

*Oh, he's not only handsome but also so sweet,* Alex thought, with increasing difficulty to resist the guy's charm.

Before they leave, Choi Hyun, like a real mother or older sister, warned Byun Sehun about how he should treat Kim Hana, and the time he should bring her back.

"I understand, Ma'am" the actor said smiling at the end. "I promise I will treat her like a lady and she will be home at the appointed time."

"You better keep your word!"

"Now I think we should go" the actor said to Alex, holding out his hand.

"O-okay" Alex said, extending his delicate and manicured hand too, which was easily enveloped by the guy's hand. *I can't believe I'm leaving home holding hands with a man!* He thought distressed. What could happen during that night?

END OF PART 67.2



### PART 67.3

Byun Sehun took Alex to a trendy restaurant among young adults in Seoul. The actor behaved like a perfect gentleman, opening the car door, and pulling *Kim Hana's* chair out in the restaurant. Alex was still very, very nervous – he was feeling like a prey trapped by a predator. Realizing this, Byun Sehun did his best to make him feel at ease.

"So, what would you like to drink?" he asked at some point. "I believe alcohol is out of the question, right?"

He was right. His manager had told Alex countless times that he couldn't drink alcohol in public at all. "But I don't know why he's being so strict about it" Alex said. "It's not like somebody's watching over us now."

"Oh, you have so much to learn about being an idol... Look covertly at that girl in the blue dress at the back of the room. She's taking a picture of us with her phone right now. And that guy with red hair behind me, he's been filming us since we arrived."

"Wow, I hadn't realized that!" Alex said, now looking around paranoidly.

"You get better at recognizing this over time. Also, your manager won't be so rigid in a couple of years. I remember that in my debut year I couldn't drink alcohol either because the public could react badly."

Alex then ordered mango juice while the actor drank wine. They had a delicious meal with several typical Korean dishes, including Dak-galbi (spicy grilled pork ribs), Doenjang-jjigae (paste soup) and Bibimbap (a kind of risotto with vegetables).

Throughout the night, Alex slowly relaxed, and saw that Byun Sehun wasn't a monster that would attack him anytime as he had foolishly imagined before. In fact, he was a very nice company and Alex realized he was actually having fun.

When they were almost finished dinner, a young woman approached their table embarrassed. "Hmm... Excuse me?" she said. "You two are Byun Sehun and Kim Hana, aren't you?"

"Yes, that's right" the actor said.

"Oh my gosh, I like you two so much! Could you take a selfie with me, please?"

"Sure, why not?" Byun Sehun.

After the photo, the girl thanked them and walked away. But now that she had had the guts to ask for it (and had been successful), a lot of people did the same, and soon there was a long line in front of their table.

"One of the downsides of being famous..." Byun Sehun whispered to Alex when he had opportunity, smirking. But what was troubling Alex at that moment was something else. He was sure that soon all those pictures would be on Instagram (some of them had probably already been uploaded), and then the news that he had gone out with Byun Sehun would spread rapidly... Alex got very nervous at the thought of the buzz it would generate.

Some time later, Byun Sehun parked his car in front of the building where Alex lived. "Here you are, safe and sound, and at the time your unnie ordered!"

"That's right!" Alex laughed with her hands over her mouth. "You know Choi Hyun-Unnie could have killed you otherwise!" he joked.

They then walked to the entrance of the building. "I loved the night, Kim Hana."

"Me too, Byun Sehun" Alex said, and he was being honest. "Thanks for inviting me!"

Byun Sehun then put his hands on the feminized man's waist and leaned closer. Alex knew what was about to happen. However, he made no effort to avoid this. Somehow it seemed right. The date had been perfect and that was the only possible outcome...

Byun Sehun kissed *Kim Hana* softly and *she* put *her* hands around his neck. This had already happened in *her* dreams, and also during the recordings of the two Sweet Dolls' MVs. That time,

though, it was different. This wasn't *her* imagination or a staging – It was real, and *Kim Hana* really loved it.

Then, suddenly, this was over. "Good night, Kim Hana. I'll call you later."

*Is that it?* Alex thought, confused. The actor hadn't even tried a French kiss nor had touched *her* butt and breasts as a lot of other guys would have done. Alex himself used to do this in his first dates when he was the man in the relationship.

*Oh, Byun Sehun must really respect me and like me,* Alex realized as he entered the building. *He's such a nice and sweet guy.* He was feeling something he had never experienced before and he couldn't explain it. What was that?

As soon as he stepped inside his apartment, he was surprised by what seemed at first as an assault. Two people jumped on him and started yelling. He soon realized, relieved, that these were just Choi Hyun and Song Yeon. The girls were screaming excitedly that they wanted to know everything about the date.

"There's not much to tell..." Alex evasively said.

"Oh, really?" Song Yeon said, raising an eyebrow. "Oh my god, look at your face!"

"What's wrong with my face?" Alex asked, puzzled.

"Oh I can see!" Choi Hyun said.

"What, what?" Alex insisted.

"This dreamy expression... This silly smile..." Song Yeon started. "I think you're in love, Kim Hana!"

"What? Are you crazy? I'm not in..."

But it was already too late. Song Yeon wasn't listening anymore. Instead, she began to sing, "Kim Hana loves Byun Sehun, Kim Hana loves Byun Sehun..." and soon Choi Hyun joined her. Alex was impressed by the fact that his unnie, who had acted like a responsible mother just a few hours before, now was behaving like a fifteen years old girl.

But then he thought about it. That feeling he couldn't explain... Was it love? The truth was that Alex had never fallen in love before, so he wasn't sure. But was that possible? *Oh my gosh, what if I really am in love with Byun Sehun? What should I do?*

His thoughts were interrupted by the girls who dragged him into the bedroom. They said they would put on some comfortable nighties, and eat some chocolate while Kim Hana told them everything that had happened. She wouldn't escape that time...

END OF PART 67.3



#### PART 68

As Alex had predicted, the news that he had went out with Byun Sehun soon spread all over the country, and caused a great commotion. Already the next day, this became the main subject of the Korean entertainment world, and the feminized man was bombarded with several questions about this.

Alex decided to ignore this harassment at first, but the effect of this decision was even worse. In a few hours, there were several reports that the two were a couple now, with even some false statements from Alex and Byun Sehun confirming this – well, at least Alex guessed that the guy's statements were false too. He didn't believe the actor would say they were in a serious relationship after just a kiss. *That kiss...*

Just remembering it made him feel that thrill all over again. As much as Alex wanted to deny it, he had loved that moment... Deep down, he wished it had lasted forever. This had been so affectionate and warm. Alex felt like a loved and protected girl.

*But I'm not a girl!* He told himself, almost desperate. He shouldn't feel like that when kissed by a man. He should feel repulsed!

While Alex was thinking about it, he heard his phone ringing. He saw that this was a text message, exactly from Byun Sehun. It said: "Thanks for the wonderful night. This may sound silly, but I can't stop thinking about you. I hope to see you again soon! Kisses, Sehun."

Before Alex realized what he was doing, he began to respond to the message, with a silly grin on his face. "I looved it too! 😊 Sure, let me know when you can!" But then, before he pressed the button to send the text, he saw what he was doing. *What's wrong with me?* It seems that Choi Hyun and Song Yeon are right. I really am acting like a fool in love...

That afternoon, Alex had another meeting with Dr. Wong, the psychologist. He decided to tell the man his problem, and ask his opinion. Alex couldn't tell the whole truth, of course, so he invented that even though he longed to be a girl all his life, he had never thought he was attracted to men, but now it seemed to be changing.

"But it isn't possible, right, Mr. Wong?"

As usual, the man didn't respond immediately. He thought for a moment before saying, "In your case, I believe that you were too overloaded with your gender identity issues to think about your sexuality. Now, you're finally having the opportunity to self-explore and find out what really attract you."

"But, sir... I... I used to think I was attracted to girls... Even wishing to be one of them..."

"This could be a possibility. Sexuality and gender identity are not necessarily intertwined. However, now that you are finding your true self, this doesn't seem to be the case. Maybe you thought you were attracted to girls before because you were in denial, since you was still unable to see yourself as the woman you are."

"I... I don't know, sir..."

"My dear girl" Dr. Wong said, with a paternal smile. "I think you're still in denial. You need to accept yourself as a woman. This is what you always wanted, after all. It doesn't matter if some part of your body is still male. What matters is that you are a woman inside. If you feel happy as the girlfriend of some nice guy, what is the problem? Isn't that what we all seek? Happiness?"



#### PART 69.1

Alex and Byun Sehun kept going out together whenever their schedules allowed. Over time, it became impossible for the feminized man to avoid this issue in interviews and TV shows. He then admitted that he was indeed going out with Byun Sehun, and that he was very happy about it.

Most of the public, as expected, reacted positively. However, Alex also received some terrifying messages from some fanatical fans of the actor saying that *Kim Hana* didn't deserve to be his girlfriend, and making a series of threats. His manager, however, told Alex not to worry about that because those messages certainly came from teenage girls who just wanted to scare him. They wouldn't try to harm him for real.

Since Alex was spending all his meager free time with Byun Sehun, he didn't have time to do anything else. This was bad because he had decided to *relearn* English, in order to facilitate his transition back to his old self in the future, but now he just had no time to study.

Even so, he had to admit that his encounters with the actor weren't exactly a burden – quite the contrary, in fact. He was enjoying it more and more. When he needed to stay a whole week without seeing Byun Sehun because of the Sweet Dolls' commitments, he missed the guy so much that it was almost physically painful. He missed their conversations, the actor's clever jokes, the way he looked at *her* and how kind he was, and undeniably Alex also missed being kissed by him. Oh yes, the couple's kisses had evolved from simple pecks on the lips to deep passionate kisses.

All this made Alex even more confused. He still believed that he wanted to be a man again, but how could this be possible if he was so well adapted to his life as a Korean girl? He was even dating a guy... a guy he believed to be in love with. It was so distressing... In those moments, as much as Alex wanted to avoid, Dr. Wong's words always came back to his mind. "If you feel happy as the girlfriend of some nice guy, what is the problem? Isn't that what we all seek? Happiness?"

Could the psychologist be right? Was Alex overthinking something that in fact was pretty simple? He still didn't know. The only thing he knew for sure was that he couldn't wait to see Byun Sehun again, and he was already planning what he would wear. *Will he like to see me in that little red dress that Song Yeon gave me last week?* He wondered, giggling.

END OF PART 69.1

When Byun Sehun saw *Kim Hana*, he just couldn't take his eyes off the *girl*. He had always thought she was very beautiful, of course, but that night she was more than that... It was even hard to explain in words. All he knew was that he was completely hypnotized by the girl.

Alex soon realized how impressed the actor was by his appearance, and this made the feminized man feel very satisfied. He knew he was looking good. That red dress really was gorgeous, and his make-up and hair were flawless. Still, he didn't know this would have such a strong effect on Byun Sehun. That was a wonderful feeling. Alex was feeling so pretty and flattered... So feminine.

"You look amazing" Byun Sehun said, kissing *Kim Hana* gently on the lips and feeling the cherry taste of *her* red lipstick.

"Thank you" Alex said softly, enjoying the feeling of the guy's strong arms around his thin waist. This really felt good... Oh, he was so screwed!

They again went to a restaurant and had a very nice dinner, but this time there was something different in the air – there was a certain tension between the couple. Alex felt like something was about to happen, and his intuition was right.

At some point, Byun Sehun stared deeply into *Kim Hana's* eyes, making the girl shudder. He then said, "We've been going out together for some time now, but we still have not had a chance to make it official. Therefore..." the actor pulled something out of his pocket. "Kim Hana, would you like to be my girlfriend?"

Alex's eyes widened when he saw that the actor was holding a promise ring. Well, at least he supposed that this was a promise ring since it was so fancy that could very well be an engagement ring. It was silver, with a pretty heart-shaped diamond on top. This was the most beautiful ring he had ever seen, and it certainly must have been very expensive.

"Oh, Byun Sehun-oppa... I... I don't know what to say..."

"Well, I would be happy – and also relieved – if you said yes."

"Of course I accept, you fool!" Alex said with such enthusiasm that even he himself got impressed. When Byun Sehun put the ring on his finger, he felt that something changing inside him – something that would hardly return to the previous state. That night would really be a watershed in his life, and it was just beginning...

END OF PART 69.2

As soon as Byun Sehun and Alex got to the actor's car, they started making out intensely. The feminized man just couldn't resist – not anymore. After so much time trying to suppress his urges, they had now come to the surface with full force, taking control of him completely.

He had never felt so hot before. He nearly lost his mind as Byun Sehun kissed his ear and neck, and rubbed his legs and belly. Alex no longer cared whether he should be doing it or not. The concept of right and wrong made no sense to him at that time, especially about something as silly as his manhood. *If I'm happy as a girl, why is that a problem?* He kept saying to himself.

Slowly, Byun Sehun's hands began to rise toward Alex's boobs, and the feminized man began to moan even louder. When the actor finally touched his nipples, Alex had to control himself so as not to scream with pleasure.

"Do you like it?" Byun Sehun asked, rubbing Alex's boobs gently.

"Yeah" Alex groaned. "Please don't stop now!"

"I wouldn't dare to even think of doing something like that" he said, kissing his neck again. "I love you, Kim Hana."

"I... I love you too!" Alex admitted for the first time, not only to the actor but also to himself...

-----

About ten minutes later, Byun Sehun started the car. Along the way, where possible, he kept a hand on *Kim Hana's* leg, stroking the inner part of *her* thigh. Those caresses were making *her* so horny that *she* didn't even realize he wasn't driving towards *her* apartment. When the vehicle finally stopped, Alex looked around and asked Byun Sehun where they were.

"This is my apartment. We can keep having fun here."

In another night Alex would have been worried to hear this, but at that moment he wasn't able to think straight. Byun Sehun's apartment was very nice, modern and spacious, with a beautiful view of the city.

"Here" he offered Alex a glass of wine. "Now that we're not under the public eye, I think you can have a bit of alcohol."

"I don't know if I should... I don't have the habit of drinking, you know" In fact Alex had drunk a lot back in America, but this seemed to have happened so long ago that he didn't know what could happen if he drank again.

"That's okay, honey. You're safe with me. I won't let anything bad happen to you... ever!"

Alex was definitely feeling safe and protected, so he accepted the wine. "Hmm... This is tasty" he said, sipping the drink.

"Yeah, this really is. I was saving this bottle for a special occasion. However, I have to say that it's not as delicious as your lips" he said, kissing *her* again.

After two or three glasses of wine, Alex was already feeling dizzy, and Byun Sehun took the feminized man to his bedroom. Before long, Alex was already lying in the bed without his dress, and he had also helped Byun Sehun to take off his shirt. He knew very well what was about to happen... But would he go that far?

-----

Byun Sehun kissed Alex again, while his hands rubbed the body of the feminized man. Shortly after, he took off Alex's bra, and then his boobs were finally free.

"You have a very beautiful body" the actor whispered in *Kim Hana's* ear, just before he started sucking *her* nipples. "You are such a perfect girl!"

Alex was getting more and more aroused because of all this talk and fondling. He was about to surrender fully. However, there was something telling him that he couldn't do that. Not because he was actually a man or something – At that moment, the part of him which insisted on seeing himself as a male person seemed dead. The big problem was that his body hid a *little secret*.

Dr. Yeob had assured Alex more than once that his prosthetic vagina was fully functional and he was completely safe using this. Alex himself had proven this in his bedroom several times. Still, he was worried that something wrong could happen. What if Byun Sehun somehow discovered the truth? That would be so embarrassing that Alex wouldn't know what to do. He needed to avoid this possibility, and quick, because the guy's hands were already dangerously close to his panties.

"Wait a minute, please" he said.

"What's wrong, babe?" Byun Sehun asked, kissing Alex's breasts and making him moan involuntarily.

"I... I don't think I'm ready for that..."

"What? But I'm sure you're enjoying it as much as I am, so what's the problem? Don't tell me... Are you a virgin?"

"Hmm... Yes, I am" Alex lied, or maybe not... At least as a girl he really was a virgin.

"Oh, I should have known... A sweet and pure girl like you..."

For a moment Alex thought that Byun Sehun would be bothered by this discovery, but it was quite the opposite – upon learning that Kim Hana was a virgin, he got even hornier.

"Don't worry, honey. I promise I will be gently" and saying so, the guy started to take off Alex's panties...

"No! Wait..." the feminized man stopped him again. "I'm sorry, honey, but I really don't think I'm ready... Not tonight. Can you... Can you understand that?" he asked pouting.

"Fine" the guy said, a little rougher than Alex had expected. Like a silly girl in love, the feminized guy had imagined that the actor would respond in a supportive and comprehensive way.

"But... Hmm... Maybe I can do something for you..." Alex said, biting his lip.

"That would be great" Byun Sehun said smiling again. "But... Hmm... Only if you really want to do that, of course" he added hastily

"Of course I want, *oppa!*" Alex replied, thinking that men really were all the same...

Back in America, Alex had always heard some offensive jokes about the size of Asian men's dicks. However, now he could see that those jokes were absolutely wrong. Well, at least in Byun Sehun's case – his penis wasn't small at all. In fact, it was bigger than Alex's cock had ever been, and this scared him as he held it with his delicate hands. Was he really going to do that? Could he ever be a man again after this? Did it matter? At least that night he didn't think he wanted to be a man again. But what if he regretted it later?

So many doubts, but Alex was sure of something. He was loving the feeling of holding that cock. It was so hard and throbbing... And *Kim Hana* knew Byun Sehun was feeling so excited because of *her*. *She* was doing this to him. This was such an intoxicating sensation... Before *she* could control *herself*, *she* kissed the cock's tip, and then began to suck it, slowly. *She* felt great doing so, and she realized that Byun Sehun was enjoying it a lot too. She then started to suck faster, and the guy began to moan louder. Oh, it was really fantastic! She loved it so much... She loved his cock. She loved to play with her boobs while she was sucking it. And who knows... Perhaps she was ready to admit that she loved being a woman too...

END OF PART 69.4

-----



Another important K-Pop tradition, as Alex learned during his stay in Korea, was the presentations of girl groups on military bases. It was a great honor to be invited to perform on such places, and being one of the military's favorite groups was also significant for the image of a group.

For this reason, most of the Sweet Dolls' members got very happy when informed by their manager that they would perform at a military base in Seoul. Alex, however, was a little apprehensive at hearing this. He knew that in such a place the audience would be exclusively made up of men, and those guys would certainly be *very excited* to see a group of beautiful girls after so long away from women due to the military service. In South Korea, military service was mandatory for all men, lasting between two and three years. Not even idols from boy groups could escape this obligation.

Even after everything he had already experienced since his life as Kim Hana had begun, Alex could still get very nervous about male attention, especially in a situation like that, where his feminine condition was so evident and he felt vulnerable.

*Well, you didn't bother about your female condition last week when you were in Byun Sehun's apartment,* said a voice in his mind, reminding him of what had happened, and that voice was right, as Alex knew very well.

Since that night, Alex had been trying to avoid thinking about that. He needed some time until he felt ready for the final decision. He knew that living as Kim Hana definitely was now a real possibility to be considered. He couldn't deny that he enjoyed that life – not anymore, when it was so evident. But he needed to be sure that it was what he really wanted and that he wouldn't regret this decision later.

This was clear that he was in love with Byun Sehun, and perhaps because of this he wasn't thinking straight. He needed to stay alone for some time. Fortunately, both of them were terribly busy those days, so they weren't having time to meet. Alex's only constant reminder of his boyfriend was the promise ring in his right hand, and at several moments he could spend a long time looking at it with a dreamy look. *Oh, is that true? Do I want to be Kim Hana, a Korean girl, forever?* He always wondered.

END OF PART 70.1

On the way to the military base, the Sweet Doll manager's phone rang and the man had a heated conversation. "We have a problem" he told the girls at the end. "There's something wrong at the place you girls are going to perform tomorrow night. I need to go there right now."

"But what about our commitment at the military base?" Choi Hyun asked.

"You'll have to go without me. You can't miss this presentation either."

The girls got nervous to hear that since they had never attended an appointment without their manager. In the van they were traveling there were other people from the record company, like sound technicians, makeup artists and some helpers, but this wouldn't be the same thing.

The manager tried to reassure them, and explained what they should say to do when they reached their destination. He then asked the driver to stop the van near a taxi stand. "Everything will be alright, girls" he said as he left the vehicle. "I trust you. *Fighting!*"

After another half an hour, the group finally arrived at the military base. In the guardhouse, the driver was told to park next to the main building where someone would be waiting for them. There, the girls found a young military man dressed in what appeared to be his dress uniform.

In the absence of the group manager, Alex, as the leader, was forced to greet him first, followed by Choi Hyun, the oldest among the Sweet Dolls.

"안녕하십니까! 만나서 반갑습니다!" the feminized man said "Hi! Nice to meet you!" using the formal polite form of Korean.

The man returned the greeting, although he didn't seem so pleased to see the girls. He then looked behind them, as if he was waiting for someone else to come and talk to him. Realizing what was going on, Alex explained that their manager wasn't able to go with them there because he had an urgent problem to solve.

"He said he hopes that all of you, members of our honorable army, can forgive him for that. Therefore, today Choi Hyun-unnie and I are representing the group" Alex said all that with his eyes down as he had been instructed to do.

"I see. I'm sure that if your manager couldn't come to visit us he certainly had a very strong motive for such" the man stated, but in fact he seemed even more annoyed to know that. "Anyway, we are *very happy* to welcome you girls here. I'm Sergeant Lee Si-won, and I had *the honor* of being chosen by our commander as your host. I am available to serve you as needed. Now, if you girls can come with me, I'll show you where you can get ready for the presentation."

During the walk, the sergeant didn't say another word nor looked at Alex and his bandmates. Alex couldn't understand what was going on. He had heard that the guys at the military bases loved to receive idols, but that man apparently would rather be fighting a war armed only with a toothbrush than being in the company of the Sweet Dolls.

"Here we are" Lee Si-won said, standing in front of a wide door. "We do not have a women's dressing room, so we had to improvise. I hope you girls approve it. I'll wait out here. If you need anything, I'm at your disposal."

Alex then entered the room with the girls, still confused by what was happening...

END OF PART 70.2

-----

Alex thought the guys had done a really good job at improvising a dressing room for them. The room was spacious and nice, and was even decorated with some flowers. The girls then changed their clothes and sat in front of a large mirror where the makeup artists put makeup on their faces.

Alex was wearing a long-sleeved white blouse which left part of his flat abdomen exposed, a pink pleated mini skirt and white high heels. When all the girls were ready, they did some vocal warm-up and then left the room. As promised, Sergeant Lee Si-won was waiting for them, with the same serious expression as before. During the walk to the place of the presentation, they saw other men, and, unlike Lee Si-Won, they looked very, very happy to see the girls. They cheered as the Sweet Dolls passed by and some even shouted their names.

One guy in particular, however, shouted something to the grumpy sergeant who was accompanying the girls. "Hey, Lee Si-won! I'm sure you're having a lot of fun now!"

In response, Lee Si-won just growled something intelligible. Alex thought that guy should be from the same hierarchical level as the sergeant or he would be in trouble. But more importantly, it was now clear that the Lee Si-won had some personal problem with the girls, and Alex wondered what it would be...

The presentation would be held in a large courtyard where a stage had been set up. As expected, there were countless guys in the audience, all wearing their uniforms. In that situation, Alex once again felt pretty aware of his female condition.

There he was, wearing a his girly outfit in front of hundreds of military guys, with his body looking extremely feminine and sexy now, and his beautiful face perfectly made-up. The difference between Alex and them was glaring. It was absurd to imagine, even for Alex himself, that one day he had been like those guys, and even manlier than a lot of them.

It was a strange feeling, but Alex didn't feel as humiliated as before. It was as if he really was already fully surrendered to his female persona. He simply couldn't see himself as a man anymore, and this became even more evident in that place.

The feminized man had long realized that Asian men were a little more subtle while lusting after a girl, but still he could see those guys looking at him with intense desire, almost as if they were hypnotized by *her beauty*. One of them, more excited, even screamed: "Kim Hana, I love you! Please, leave Byun Sehun! I'm better than him!" and then his buddies laughed.

The show was very good, with one of the most enthusiastic audiences the group had ever seen. The guys cheered all the time, and went wild during the cutest parts of the choreographies, full of *aegyo*, like when the girls blew kisses or jumped together. This was undoubtedly an experience that helped to further annihilate Alex's already virtually non-existent male ego...

END OF PART 70.3

At the end of the concert, the sergeant once again accompanied the girls to the dressing room. This time, along the way, Alex just couldn't control himself. "Sergeant Lee Si-won, can I ask you something?" he said, walking ahead next to the guy.

"Of course. Everything you want" he said trying to sound polite, although he was clearly troubled by that.

"Well... I would like to know... Why don't you like us?"

The man turned pale at this. "Who said that to you?" he asked, a bit harsh. "Hmm... I'm sorry for that. But I do not know why you might think this. I have been as helpful as possible."

"I know it, and we're very grateful for that. But still... This is as if you were doing it out of obligation. I'm sorry if I'm being inconvenient for saying so."

Alex realized that Lee Si-won seemed to be suffering an intense internal struggle. "Okay, you're right" he finally admitted. "I have been assigned to be your host against my will."

"Why?"

"Because my superiors wanted to teach me a lesson."

"I still don't understand."

"I don't think groups such as yours should come to our base, and I expressed my opinion openly. In fact, I don't think such groups should even exist."

Alex couldn't believe what he was hearing. "Why not?" he asked.

"Oh, come on! Look how you're dressed! I don't think women should expose themselves this way. I'm just trying to protect you. You know how men look at you. And you have no idea what they say on your back. But I know, and this isn't right. And this is all your fault. You girls should respect yourselves! Still, some of my superiors think such visits are important to elevate the morale of the troop..."

Alex had already been victim of misogyny a few times since he had started living as a woman, but nothing as explicit as this. He found it hard to believe he was hearing this from a twenty-something guy, and not from a reactionary old man.

"Oh, so do you think all women should be modest housewives? And this is our fault when men decide to act like pigs?"

Lee Si-won was definitely not expecting a reaction like that. "You cannot talk to me this way! You should be ashamed!"

"Why? Because you are a man and I'm just a woman?"

"No, because I'm older than you, and I'm also a military man. We are responsible for the security of the country, so everyone should respect us. And I keep what I said. You shouldn't dress and act like you do. This is just wrong!"

"Oh, really? But I have something to tell you, sergeant. If you want to be respected, you first need to respect people. And guess what? Women are people too!"

Saying so, Kim Hana quickened her step, leaving the guy behind, with her high heels clicking loudly. Now it was clear that being a woman was even more challenging than she had expected...

END OF PART 70.4

-----



After leaving the taxi, Alex had to cross five blocks before reaching his destination. This hadn't been a mistake, though – It was a sunny and pleasant spring afternoon, and he thought it was just perfect for a good walk.

Along the way, he realized with surprise that, although he had been living in Seoul for more than a year, this was the first time he was walking by himself in that city. For this reason, he thought it was striking how at ease he felt there, as if he belonged to that place. It was as if Korea really was his homeland.

However, since Alex – or better, Kim Hana – was a famous person, he had chosen a discreet outfit hoping he could go undetected by the people. He was wearing a cute blue sweater with some pink bows, high-waisted skinny jeans, pink sneakers, and a simple white purse. His hair was tied in a high bun, with a few loose strands on the sides of his face. He wasn't wearing any jewelry, and very little

makeup – just a bit of foundation, mascara, blush and lip gloss, because without it, as he now knew very well, he felt as if he were naked. Finally, a large pair of sunglasses was covering his eyes.

So far Alex's plan had worked very well. He had managed to cross all those busy blocks without arousing any unwanted attention. Only two or three guys had looked at him more sharply, but *Kim Hana* had a feeling that this was because they thought that *she* was an *attractive woman*, even dressed so casually.

Then, a little ahead, he was stopped by a young woman, and he thought that his disguise had been discovered. However, she just wanted to know where he had bought that *precious sweater*, as she referred to it. "Also" she continued, "I have to say that your look is amazing! Oh girl, you really know how to put together a simple but super girly outfit. I envy you!"

Alex just smiled a thank you and walked away. He couldn't help but he felt proud. After all, he had put together that outfit completely by himself. *How much of a man is left on me?* He wondered. Even unintentionally, he continued to dress in a more feminine way than most of the *other women*. This just seemed normal to him now...

That Thursday afternoon was a rare occasion, since that was the first Sweet Dolls' afternoon off in a long time. The girls (except Park Hara, who said she had other plans) agreed to spend some time relaxing in a resort, and then they could have a nice dinner in the early evening. Alex had promised to go with them, but the day before he said he couldn't go because he had remembered that he had an appointment with Dr. Wong, his psychologist, and he couldn't cancel it.

Choi Hyun then said she would go with him, as she always did, but Alex insisted that this wasn't necessary, and that his *unnie* really deserved a little rest. That was difficult, but he finally managed to convince her that he would be okay. In truth, the feminized man didn't have an appointment, and he felt bad for lying to his friends. However, he needed to do something else – and he needed to do it by himself.

The address to where he was going was in a quiet, leafy alley, full of old houses with traditional Korean architecture – the Hanok Homes. The place was very lovely, and it was amazing to think that he was still in a big metropolis. He almost felt that he had been teleported to a small town in the countryside.

Alex then reached his destination. He knocked on the door and waited. Shortly after, he heard footsteps inside and a male voice said: "Coming!" When the man opened the door, he apparently didn't recognize Alex. "Hmm... Can I help you, Miss?" he asked.

*Kim Hana* took off her sunglasses, and slowly the guy in front of *her* realized who *that girl* was. "No!" He exclaimed with wide eyes. "Y-you... You actually came!"

"Yes, here I am. Now the question is: are you going to invite me in or not?" Alex said, while Lee Si-won, the rude sergeant he had met at the military base, was still looking at him dumbfounded...

END OF PART 71.1

Some days before...

Alex had just woken up when his cell phone rang. Checking the screen, he realized that he didn't know that number, which was strange. Usually, only his bandmates, someone from the record company or Byun Sehun called him since nobody else knew his number.

"Hello?" he said, answering the phone call.

"Hmm... Hi" Said a male voice, seemingly embarrassed. "I... Well... I'd like to know how to get in touch with Miss Kim Hana or someone who represents her."

"This is Kim Hana" Alex said.

"Oh really?" the man exclaimed surprised.

"Yes. And who are you?"

The person said nothing for a while, and Alex even thought the call had been lost.

"Well... I'm Sergeant Lee Si-won... We met last week on the military base."

Alex couldn't believe it. He remembered that name very well since that man had made him very angry.

"How did you get my number?" he asked pissed.

"Hmm... It was you who wrote your number at the end of the visit."

Alex tried to remember what had happened, and he realized that the guy was right. When they were leaving the military base, another man approached and asked for someone to fill out a form, which was commonplace when civilians went to the military base. Alex did so, and he was so annoyed because of his discussion with Lee Si-won that he wrote his personal number instead of a record label phone number without thinking.

"But anyway" the feminized man said, "why are you calling me? What do you want?"

"I know this will sound very weird, but I'm calling to ask a favor."

"A favor? After everything you told me, you want me to do you a favor? Really?"

"Look, Miss, I'm sorry if I offended you..."

"No! You're not sorry – not for real. And what favor would that be, anyway?"

"This isn't exactly for me... It's my little sister. She's a big fan of yours and she's sick now... She discovered that you and your group were in our military base, and not only that. She found out that I interacted with you because some guy took a picture while we were walking to the presentation location. Now she's really hurt because I didn't tell this to her, and didn't take the opportunity to find a way to get her to meet you. So... Hmm... I'm sending an address to your phone now. I know you must be very busy, but if you could just show up there sometime... this can be a quick thing, you know... I would... I would be very grateful."

Alex was in shock. This guy was unbelievable! How could he expect Alex to go to his house? This was outrageous, and Alex told him all this.

"I know you don't like me, Miss" Lee Si-won said, starting to get angry. "And I don't like you or your group either. As I said, I'm asking this for my sister, a little girl who for some reason that I can't

understand really likes you. She talks about you all the time, and I thought the fans were important to you Idols. But I see that I was wrong. This industry is even more fake than I had imagined. I'll tell my sister to forget it, and I won't bother you anymore. Thank you for your time."

And saying so, Lee Si-won hung up on Alex. The feminized man was so furious that he almost returned the call to curse the sergeant, but he concluded that this wasn't worth it. The best thing to do was forget that that guy even existed...

This worked for some time, but after a few days it all came back to haunt Alex. He desperately wanted to prove to Lee Si-won that he was wrong about everything he believed, but how? And then, *Kim Hana* had a crazy idea. *She* would go to the sergeant's house, and would treat his sister very, very well. This would certainly make the guy extremely ashamed because of his behavior and prejudice, which would be very pleasurable for *Kim Hana*. In addition, his sister would start talking even more about her idol, which would certainly upset Lee Si-won.

Alex didn't know why this was so important to him now, but he knew he wouldn't be at peace until he did so...

END OF PART 71.2

"Umm... O-of course" Lee Si-won stuttered, still astonished by the fact that *Kim Hana* was actually in his house. "Come in, please."

The house wasn't big, but it very cozy, with antique furniture and many traditional ornaments. "So, aren't you supposed to be at the military base by this time?" Alex asked.

"Yeah, but..." Lee Si-won started, clearly embarrassed. "I got suspended."

"Why?"

"Well, some of my companions heard you and me arguing last week, and reported me to my superiors. They weren't happy to know about how I had behaved, and so it happened."

Alex couldn't help it, but he felt a certain satisfaction to hear that. Lee Si-won really deserved some kind of punishment. But suddenly, something worried the feminized man: What if Lee Si-won had made up this "sister story" just to bring *Kim Hana* to his house and then take revenge on *her* in some way?

No one knew Alex was there, so no one would know where to look for him if he disappeared. Alex felt stupid for accepting that invitation. What was he thinking? He felt extremely vulnerable, something that wouldn't have happened by the time he was a man. Lee Si-won was so much stronger than him now, so *Kim Hana* would have no chance against him.

"Umm... But shouldn't you have been arrested at the military base instead of being suspended?" the feminized man asked, as if he were trying to buy time and distract the sergeant while he thought of what to do next.

"Usually, yes. But due my current situation, they..."

"Lee Si-won, is there someone with you? I'm hearing voices" said a middle-aged woman entering the living room. She had short hair, a friendly face and was wearing a simple dress.

"Hey, mom! This is..."

"Oh I know who she is!" The woman interrupted him, looking at Alex with shining eyes. "How couldn't I, after all? Ye-rin talks about her all the time! I can't believe you actually came to our house, Miss Kim Hana. Thank you so much for this. Oh, my little girl will be so happy!"

Well, something was clear to Alex now. Lee Si-won hadn't lied about his supposed sister, unless that was a very well-planned act with the help of that seemingly lovely woman. He was also taken aback by the way that the woman had welcomed him. She was almost crying! Alex wondered what was really going on there.

She also apologized for her son's earlier behavior, and said that it wouldn't happen again. "I don't know why he treated you that way. He usually isn't such a bad boy, and he's very sorry now. Right, Lee Si-won?" she scolded him as if he were a little boy.

"Of course, mom" the guy said, embarrassed.

They then started walking to one of the bedrooms. Along the way, Lee Si-won placed his hand lightly on *Kim Hana's* shoulder, but seeing *her* expression he pulled his hand away quickly as if he had taken an electric shock.

"I... I just want to ask you something before we go in there" the guy explained. "My sister isn't looking at her best right now, and she's very sensitive about that. So... umm... It would be nice if you don't show any kind of fright at seeing her. Please, we would be very grateful."

When they entered the bedroom, the first thing Alex noticed was that there were at least a dozen posters of him around the place, some of them with the other members of the Sweet Dolls present, but most with only *Kim Hana*. There were also stuffed animals, dolls and other girly stuff that one can see in almost every little girl's bedroom.

Then, he finally looked at the bed, where there was a girl lying down, and his heart immediately broke...

Alex had never seen a person who appeared to be so sad and disheartened in his entire life. The girl was awake, it was clear, but this was as if her soul had abandoned her body. Her eyes were lost, and conveyed a sense of disillusionment that was extremely distressing.

It was hard to tell her age, since she looked so thin and small. Alex thought she could be anything between seven and ten years old. She was bald, and had lots of red spots on her very light face. She was wearing simple pink pajamas, and it was possible to see that she had some of those spots on her arms and legs as well. She was also using nasal cannula for oxygen.

"Hello, sweetie" said her mother, who was walking ahead. "How are you feeling now? A little better?" she asked, caressing the girl.

"The same..." She said in a weak voice.

"Well, I have a surprise for you that I'm sure will make you feel better!"

Then, Lee Si-won guided Alex forward, stopping right in front of bed. The little girl looked at them for a moment without understanding what was going on. Then, when she finally recognized *Kim Hana*, there was a transformation that made Alex completely dumbfounded.

Ye-rin's eyes widened and a broad smile formed on her lips. "No way!" the girl exclaimed, with her eyes now shining. The girl, who just a few moments before seemed deeply depressed, now appeared to be almost unable to contain all the happiness she was feeling. "Y-you..." she stammered, pointing at Alex. "You are... No way!"

Alex stepped closer and looked at the girl's mother, as if he were asking if that was okay, and the woman nodded.

"Kim Hana, is it really you?"

"Yes, dolly" Alex said, smiling. "Nice to meet you! I heard you're a big fan of my group..."

Then, before Alex understood what was happening, the girl jumped out of bed and wrapped him tightly around waist. "Oh, I love you so much! I can't believe you're here. I must be dreaming. I'm so, so happy!"

Alex was kind of numb. He had already received displays of affection from fans before, sure, but that was a lot different. This girl seemed to be seriously ill, and therefore she had every reason in the world to be sad, as she was before. But now she was overjoyed, and just because of *Kim Hana's* presence! That was something very special. Alex was sure he would never forget that moment.

Then, the little Ye-rin burst into tears, and Alex felt like doing the same thing, but he held on – he thought he needed to be strong to support the girl.

"Why are you crying, sweetie?" he asked.

"Because... I... am... so... happy" the girl said, sobbing at every word.

"If that's the case, you don't need to cry, okay? Come here" Alex took the girl to her bed and sat down next to her. "Now, what about a smile? That's it, princess. You have such a beautiful smile! Now let's chat a little."

They talked for over an hour. Ye-rin said how much she loved the Sweet Dolls, especially Kim Hana, who, according to her, was so cute, funny and pretty. She also stated that it was the group's songs that helped her when she was feeling very sad. Alex autographed the girl's CDs and posters, and asked if she wanted to take a picture with him.

"Umm... I guess not now" Ye-rin said. "You look so perfect, but I..."

Alex cursed himself for being so stupid. Why hadn't he thought better before asking that?

"You look very pretty too, Ye-rin, really" he said. "And I'm sure you'll look even prettier soon. Besides, you're an amazing and sweet girl, and this is the most important thing. When you're feeling better, I'm going to take you to our record company, so you can meet the other girls and also the studio where we record our songs. Would you like that?"

"Are you kidding me? Oh I'd love that!" she hugged Alex again. "You're so great! And you know..." she started, and then looked at her mother and brother as if she was wondering if she really should dare to say that. "I... I'd like to be just like you when I grow up... I'd like to be an Idol too!"

"This is not going to happen!" Lee Si-won said, annoyed.

"Yes, it will!" Alex stated, glaring at the guy. "If this is what you really want, Ye-rin, I swear I'll help you. You'll be an Idol!"

Some time later, the girl's mother said she needed to rest a little. She didn't want Kim Hana to leave, but Alex promised that he would come back soon, and would visit the girl pretty often. The feminized man then left the room with Lee Si-won while the girl's mother was taking care of her.

When they reached the living room, Alex could no longer control his emotions. He began to cry copiously. Surprised and unsure of what to do, Lee Si-won tried to touch her arm slightly to comfort her, and then Alex hugged him. He simply needed a hug at that moment, even though he was still angry with the guy for saying that to his sister.

"I... I had no idea..." Alex said. "When you told me that your sister was sick, I thought she had a cold or something. This is so sad and unfair... She's such a lovely girl! What's wrong with her, after all?"

"Well, she suffers from a severe case of lupus. Believe it or not, she's much better now. She spent most of the last few years in the hospital, and now that her condition is more stable the doctors thought it could be good for her to spend some time at home. But the disease has no cure, you know, and it's far from being under control in her case right now. If doctors are able to achieve this, then she may have a relatively normal life."

"Can I help in some way? Really, I can do anything! Maybe you guys need some money or..."

"Don't worry about that. Fortunately, she is already getting the best treatment available. And well, you've already helped a lot. I guess I've never seen my sister as happy as today. The last few years have been very tough for her. Sometimes it was as if she had already given up. But today... I have to say that I'm sorry, Miss Kim Hana, and this time I'm being honest. I was wrong about you. You're a great person, so much better than I am. Thank you so much for what you have done to my sister."

About an hour later, Alex was sitting on a bench in a beautiful park, in front of a lake. The sun was already beginning to set, but he didn't want to leave yet. He was feeling something... Something he still couldn't quite understand. This wasn't necessarily a bad feeling, but it was bothering him because he couldn't figure it out.

Then, as he looked at the placid, calm waters of the lake, all made sense. More than being famous, Alex had always wished to touch people with his music, just like his idols had done with him. He had always thought that the right way to do this – maybe the only way – was through rock, because no musical rhythm was so contentious and capable of awakening the spirit of change and revolution. But now he knew it was foolishness

What he had learned that afternoon was that any form of art, with the right audience, was able to inspire and transform. With his music, he had given to that poor little girl hope and maybe even a reason to live.

Alex had spent the last month looking for a way out of his present reality, so he could go back being a man and try to realize his dream, but what he didn't realize was that he was already doing it. Most people could say that his music, as a K-Pop Idol, was silly and simplistic, but even so it was able to inspire people.

About his male self... Now Alex could see clearly that it wasn't so important. In fact, he would hate to be a man again if it meant losing his bandmates, who were his best friends now ... Oh, who did Alex want to fool? He knew that he loved every little detail about being a girl, including looking pretty, the fact that he could show his emotions and affection to people and act cute when he wanted so, and he even loved Byun Sehun, his boyfriend. Yes, boyfriend!

He had found his place in life, and all this was part of his new self.

After admitting the true to himself, Alex felt another sensation that once again he couldn't identify at first. Something he hadn't felt in a long time – or maybe it was even was new to him. He started to laugh and cry at the same time realizing what it was: Peace. He had finally found his true identity.

He then remembered Bob Dylan's words in "Blowin' In The Wind": *How many roads must a man walk down before you can call him a man?*

The answer, my friend, was that SHE was Kim Hana, now and forever.

END OF PART 71.3



**Two months later...**

After the success of "Alright", the Sweet Dolls returned to the studio to record their third single. As it had been agreed before, this song should have a sexier and more mature concept, and Kim Hana composed something called "Change".

Some people thought it was too early for the group to abandon their previous innocence concept, since they had debuted less than a year before, but Kim Hana agreed that it was just the perfect time.

The song she wrote used a loving relationship as a metaphor to talk about the transformations that girls go through as they become women – Or in her case, the transformation from man to woman. Kim Hana couldn't be happier about the composition, which conveyed very well how she was feeling now that she had accepted her female self.

For the MV recording, the Sweet Dolls wore short and dark dresses, high boots, and their makeup was dramatic. The choreography of the song was very sexy, and for the first time Byun Sehun wasn't present in a MV. In fact, there was no actor involved – Just the girls, since the change of their image was the focus of the clip.

As always, the filming was long and tiring, but in the end everything worked out. Kim Hana was happy to see that it was still afternoon. That way, she would still have time to visit little Ye-rin that day. As promised, she was doing it often, and she was happy to see that the girl was looking better every day. Her mother insisted that all this was because of Kim Hana, but the idol would rather not believe it. She was glad to think she was helping just a little bit, which already was a great honor for her.

Her relationship with Byun Sehun was also going great, and she was more and more in love. He really was a very sweet guy, although he sometimes could get impatient that Kim Hana refused to have sex with him because she wasn't ready yet. If only she could get a few weeks off to undergo that damn surgery...

Still, in general, she was delighted with her life, and pleased for finally having accepted herself as Kim Hana.

END OF PART 72.1

"Hey, miss Kim Hana!" Ye-rin said, smiling broadly. "I'm so glad you are here again!"

"I'm glad too, sweetie! How are you today?"

"I'm feeling better, especially now that you're here! Oh, your makeup is pretty today!"

"Thank you, princess! We were filming our new MV, so that's why it's a little more dramatic. I didn't want to miss even a minute of the time I have to spend with you so I didn't bother removing my makeup before coming here!"

"You're so good to me" the little girl said with tear-stained eyes.

"Now, now, you don't need to cry, okay? I want to see your pretty smile!"

"Okay..." the girl giggled. "Maybe someday you can teach me how to do this beautiful makeup!"

"Sure! It'll be a lot of fun!"

"Umm... I don't think this would be appropriate" said Lee Si-won, who was in the bedroom too.

Yes, Kim Hana had noticed since her arrival that the sergeant hadn't approved her makeup. Probably he thought it wasn't "*modest enough*"...

Kim Hana had already had the opportunity to talk to his mother alone. The woman explained that he wasn't as heartless as he seemed sometimes, but unfortunately he had took after his father a little too much. His father had also been a military man, and had died about five years ago during a military exercise.

The relationship between Kim Hana and Lee Si-won had improved a little over the past few weeks. The guy seemed a little more tolerant, but sometimes, like that afternoon, he could still be uncompromising.

"You shouldn't be like that, big bro!" Ye-rin complained. "That's why Kim Hana will never have eyes for you!"

"I... Who... W-what ..." Lee Si-won stammered. He was as red as a tomato. "And who said I want her to have eyes for me?" he finally was able to ask.

"Don't try to fool me, big bro! I see the way you look at her when you think she's not looking. We girls know these things!"

"But you're just a kid, Ye-rin, and a silly one! You're completely wrong, and I think you deserve a punishment to learn not to talk such nonsense!"

"Calm down guys, please!" Kim Hana begged. "I'm sure Ye-rin was just teasing you, Lee Si-won, as siblings always do. Right, Ye-rin?" she asked, winking at the girl.

"Umm... Sure!"

But Kim Hana had said that just to appease the situation. Faced with such a disproportionate reaction, she concluded that the little girl was right, at least a little. Kim Hana had never thought about Lee Si-won that way, of course, since they spent most of the time fighting, and the girl was hopelessly in love with Byun Sehun, her boyfriend. However, she was awake that Lee Si-won wasn't an ugly guy. He was quite good-looking actually, with a muscular body, a manly face and short hair. Kim Hana was sure he could get a nice girlfriend if he wasn't so obnoxious and old-fashioned so often.

END OF PART 72.2



A few weeks later, the Sweet Dolls were still promoting their new single, which had been well received by most of the public and was selling very well. Just like in the MV, the girls were wearing shorter and tighter clothes in their shows and TV presentations, and Kim Hana was enjoying it.

Now that she had embraced her femininity, she thought it was nice to look and act sexy sometimes, although she still loved wearing cute outfits on other occasions. It was fantastic how women had far more options regarding fashion, and how it was also a way of expressing her mood every day.

This is exactly what Kim Hana was telling Dr. Wong, her therapist, during a session on a Wednesday afternoon.

"I'm glad to know that you're finally happy, young lady. You've been through a lot in your life, and you really deserve it."

"Thanks, sir! And I also have to thank you for all your help. These sessions have been very important to me, you know..."

"It's nice to hear this too. As I've always said, you just needed to accept yourself as the wonderful girl you have always been, and everything would be better. Now, however, I need to give you a different advice."

"And what would it be, doctor?"

"You are in a great phase of your life, Kim Hana. Everything is going well, and you are very happy. But you need to remember that it cannot last forever. Life is full of ups and downs, and you need to be ready to face difficult times. However, I'm sure this will be so much easier now that you have accepted your true self."

"Why are you telling me all this, Dr. Wong?" Kim Hana asked, fearful. "Do you have bad news to me?"

"On the contrary, young lady. I have great news. I talked to Dr. Yeob earlier today, and he told me that he convinced your record label that you need to have a *minor surgery* with some urgency. Therefore, they decided to anticipate your group's vacation. You will be free in about two weeks, and then you can have your final surgery. You told me you were looking forward to that, so I guess you're even happier now" he added, smiling.

"You're right, doctor. I can't believe it! This is so wonderful!" Kim Hana was about to cry. She would finally be a "*full woman*". Well, she already felt like a woman, but after surgery she would be able to have sex again. She could hardly wait to tell it to Byun Sehun, her boyfriend. She wouldn't be able to tell all the details, of course, but she would tell him that he just needed to be a little more patient..."

END OF PART 73

At night, after attending another TV show, Kim Hana went to Byun Sehun's apartment. A few weeks earlier, he had given her a copy of his apartment key to show her that their relationship was really serious, but she had never needed to use it – until then. The girl had decided to surprise her boyfriend so she didn't tell him she was going there.

She knew he would be home because he had called her out, but she told him that the Sweet Dolls had another concert, so unfortunately she couldn't meet him. Then, he said that in this case he would go to bed earlier that night.

Awake that Byun Sehun liked the sexy clothes she was using for the promotions of the latest single of her group, Kim Hana decided to wear a hot outfit for him, consisting of a tight brown mini blouse, a black leather skirt, black ankle boots, and even the same choker and earrings she had used in the "Change" MV.

When Kim Hana entered the apartment, the place was dark and quiet. Had her boyfriend already fallen asleep? She thought that was a possibility. However, as she approached his room, she could hear muffled voices. She thought he should be watching TV or something. But when she got at the door she heard some very weird groans...

Kim Hana opened the bedroom door and what she saw was so shocking that she almost fainted. In the bed, there were Byun Sehun and another girl... having sex. It was so crazy that Kim Hana stood still without reaction for what seemed like a long time. Her brain just couldn't process it all.

Byun Sehun and the girl hadn't yet realized that there was someone else in the room, so they kept doing their thing. The guy was penetrating her eagerly, while saying how beautiful and hot she was – He was even saying the same sentences he used to say to Kim Hana when they were making out... She couldn't believe that. She was a fool... just a fucking fool! She looked at the commitment ring she was wearing and realized that everything had been a lie.

Then, the naked girl finally saw Sehun Kim Hana and she shrieked.

"Oh yeah, babe, you like this, don't you?" Byun Sehun said, thinking the girl was screaming in pleasure.

"Umm.... It's not that... You... You should look over there" she said, pointing toward Kim Hana.

When the guy saw who was there, he got as pale as death. "K-kim Hana?" he stuttered. "What are you doing here? I thought you had a concert and... and this isn't what you think it is!"

Kim Hana had never felt so hurt. This had been the first time she had truly fallen in love with someone, and she had no idea that a disappointed in love could be so devastating. Before she could control herself, she began to cry, and she hated herself for doing so – She didn't want Byun Sehun to realize how much she was suffering because of him. Without saying a word, she turned around and began to leave the room sobbing.

"Wait, Kim Hana!" Byun Sehun shouted, standing up and wrapping a sheet around his waist. "I can explain everything!" he added, but Kim Hana wasn't listening anymore...

END OF PART 73.2

-----

Byun Sehun caught Kim Hana when the girl was in the living room, almost leaving the apartment.

"Wait" he said again, holding her arm. "Please let me at least explain what happened.

"How on earth are you going to explain that?" She screamed. "I saw everything! What can you say about the fact that you were having sex with that girl?"

"Okay, I know I screwed up, but ...

"But what?"

"It was just a moment of weakness, okay? It didn't mean anything to me and..."

"Oh, really? So, do you expect me to just let it go? Maybe I should even make some *kimchi* for both of you. I'm sure you two are feeling very tired and hungry now!"

"None of this would have happened if you hadn't refused to have sex with me for so long!" Byun Sehun yelled, starting to get angry too.

"Oh, so now this is my fault? I... I can't believe it... I thought you... I don't want to see you again!"

"Don't say bullshit, you stupid girl. You're my girlfriend!"

"Not anymore!"

"Are you sure? Okay, Kim Hana, I'll be honest this time. Let me explain to you how things work in real life..." Somehow, his face looked different now. It had a very cold expression. Kim Hana thought it was almost like she was talking to another person – Someone she did not know.

"If you break up with me, your career is over! People will never believe that I betrayed you. For everyone, you'll just be the bitch who broke the heart of the 'poor Byun Sehun' for no reason. You may find this unfair, but that's the truth."

"Do you think that people will believe you just because you are a man?"

"Yes, that's right! And you know that a scandal like that will ruin your image for the rest of your life, and even your bandmates will be harmed!"

"And why would you want to keep going out with me, anyway?" the girl asked, crying again.

"Are you really asking me that? Oh girl, I never thought you could be that stupid. Because the public loves it! After we started dating, I got lots of new proposals for advertising campaigns, and even a pay raise! Whether you like it or not, we are fantastic together, babe! People just can't get enough of us!" he said smirking.

"So... Was all this a lie? Have you ever had any real feelings for me?" Kim Hana felt even more stupid for asking that, but she simply couldn't stop herself. "It can be... Everything you said... No one can pretend so well..."

"Don't forget that I'm an actor, and a good one. But of course I like you, girl. Well, maybe not the way you think, but you're so hot... If you just..."

"Get away from me!" she shouted. "Don't you dare touch me ever again!"

"If you want things to be like that... I hope you can be a good actress too, because you need to keep behaving like a girl in love in public. Moreover, you're blaming the wrong person..."

"What you mean?"

"I shouldn't tell you this, but what the hell can you do, anyway? Who masterminded all this plan was Park Hara, your bandmate. She convinced your record label that my presence in the MV of the group could be very good for the Sweet Dolls' image, and then she came to see me... She told me she was sure you had a crush on me, and that a relationship with you could be very good for me too. She knows how to make her point... And then, I just followed all of her advice... I'm sure that a person like her is manipulating much more aspects of your life than you imagine. But one thing is for sure: she also knows what it takes to be successful at showbiz. Your group wouldn't be so famous without all her plots behind the scenes..."

When Kim Hana finally left the apartment, she was still having trouble accepting that that night had been real, and not just a terrible nightmare. She remembered Dr. Wong's prophetic words during their

last meeting. *"Life is full of ups and downs, and you need to be ready to face difficult times."* But could she really do that? At that moment, she just wanted to die to end that suffering...

But then, a different feeling grew inside her... It was a hatred she had never experienced before. That wasn't the right night to die, oh no!

It was time to finally confront Park Hara.

END OF PART 73.3

When Kim Hana arrived at Park Hara's apartment, he was greeted by Jun Sunhwa, who shared the place with her.

"Hey, Hana!" she said. "Is everything okay? You look..."

"Is Park Hara here?" it was all she asked.

"Yes, and the other girls are here too. We are..."

Before she could even complete the sentence, Kim Hana walked past her into the living room. There, she found Park Hara, and also Song Yeon and Choi Hyun. They were watching a movie.

"Hi, girl!" Song Yeon said. "What are you doing here? I thought you were with Byun Sehun."

Just the mention of that name made Kim Hana feel even angrier. Next to her, there was a lampshade. Without thinking, she grabbed the object and threw it in Park Hara's direction. Park Hara's luck was that, as a great dancer, she had amazing reflexes. Thus, she managed to lower her head just in time and the lampshade hit the wall behind her and broke into a thousand pieces.

"What the hell was that?" Choi Hyun asked, getting up and heading towards Kim Hana.

"Get out of my way, unnie! I need..."

"You need to explain me what's going on" She said seriously, using her authority as the Sweet Dolls' *older sister*. "You almost hit Park Hara and she could have been seriously injured. Why did you do that?"

"Do you really want to know?" Kim Hana asked, realizing that she had no alternative. "Fine! I'll tell you ... I'll tell all of you!"

And so she did. Kim Hana reported what had happened in Byun Sehun's apartment, and everything he had told her. The girls were outraged to hear what Byun Sehun had done.

"I'm sorry for that, Kim Hana honey" Park Hara said, with what Kim Hana believed to be a fake sad expression. "But I assure you that he was lying about me. He was probably just trying to confuse you."

"I guess she's right, sweetie" Choi Hyun said. "You cannot trust Byun Sehun after..."

"Oh, but I'm sure he was telling the truth. And you know why? I'll tell you everything Park Hara has done to me since we met..."

"Kim Hana honey" Park Hara said in a sweet and innocent voice. "You're very tired and confused. Maybe you should..."

"Shut up, bitch!" Kim Hana said furiously. "The girls deserve to know who you really are."

Then, Kim Hana told them the story from the beginning. How Park Hara had manipulated him into dressing like a girl... All the times she had humiliated him to further weaken his male ego... The night, still in America, she had forced him to kiss another guy... And worst of all: her plot to make Kim Hana (or Alex, at the time) underwent those extreme surgeries that virtually eliminated any chance he still had of being an American guy again without him/her knowing what was happening.

As Kim Hana was telling them all this, she felt more and more relieved. It was nice to finally be able to share it with someone. Park Hara was listening to her impassively. It was impossible to know what she was thinking. And the other girls, Kim Hana's true friends, seemed increasingly shocked and angry...

END OF PART 73.4

"I can't believe it!" Choi Hyun said, at the end of Kim Hana's story. "How could you do all this, Park Hara? And... Oh my God! Were you pretending that you like to be a girl, Kim Hana? Do you want to be Alex again? "

"At first, yes. But now I... I truly like being Kim Hana..."

"Well, that's a relief" Song Yeon said. "But it doesn't change the fact that everything Park Hara has done was wrong!"

"It wasn't exactly like..." Park Hara started saying, but she was interrupted by Kim Hana.

"Are you really going to say that I'm lying?" she screamed furiously, and again she needed to be restrained by her bandmates or she would attack the other girl.

"Tell us the true, Park Hara!" Choi Hyun demanded. "At least once!"

"Alright!" Park Hara said, feeling trapped. "If that's what you want to hear, fine! I did those things! But you girls need to understand that I did it all thinking of the group's success. Without someone as me, we wouldn't be where we are today!"

"Oh, don't be cynical!" Kim Hana cried. "You had no right to do this to me, no matter what your intentions were!"

"And why are you complaining, after all? You were the one who claimed you're happy being a girl!"

"This is not the point! You cannot manipulate people's lives this way. What if I was depressed for having my body completely transformed without my consent? And there is also Byun Sehun..."

"I had no way of knowing he would do that with you!"

"Again, it doesn't matter! Why the hell did you convince him to try to seduce me in the first place? Was it just for the pleasure of controlling people's lives?"

"Song Yeon and Choi Hyun told me they thought you had a crush on him... Because of the way you looked at him when he appeared on TV... I was just trying to help you!"

"Oh, come on, Park Hara!" Jun Sunhwa said.

"Okay, I also thought this could attract positive publicity for the group! Is it so deplorable? Don't you girls see that I was doing it for you all too? Was that so reprehensible?" she asked, looking at her bandmates for support.

"You're a monster, Park Hara" Choi Hyun stated, looking at her with disgust.

"Yeah" Song Yeon agreed. "I always thought you were a little too ambitious, but what you did..."

"At least you can understand me, right, Jun Sunhwa?" Park Hara asked the girl, who was her last hope. "You've been my roommate all this time and..."

"And I'm surprised you didn't try to attack me with a knife while I was sleeping! You are so evil! Get away from me!"

"So all of you hate me? You're so ungrateful! Without me, you wouldn't be famous! Don't you see it?" but no one was paying attention anymore. All the girls, even Jun Sunhwa, were leaving the apartment...

END OF PART 73.5

-----



"You look sad today, Kim Hana-*unnie*" said Ye-rin. It was Tuesday afternoon, and Kim Hana was once again visiting the little girl.

"Don't worry about me" Kim Hana said, with a weak smile. "I'm just a little tired. That's all."

"Hmm..." Ye-rin murmured, feeling that Kim Hana wasn't being completely honest, but not wanting to disrespect the woman who was being so good to her.

The truth was that Kim Hana was still devastated because of everything that had happened. In one night, she had discovered that the guy she loved was a terrible person, and also that Park Hara was an even crueler girl than she had imagined.

Those were terrible days for the Sweet Dolls. Although they were being more successful than ever, behind the scenes that was the group's worst moment. The day after that fateful night, the girls went to the manager of the group to say that Park Hara had to go. They just couldn't work with her anymore.

However, this wouldn't be so simple...

The girls couldn't tell the whole truth of what had happened – the manager didn't know that Kim Hana had been a guy, after all – so their argument was vague and unconvincing.

"Girls, listen to me" the man said seriously. This type of disagreement is common in girls groups. You stay together almost twenty-four hours per day, and everything is very intense. I also know that Park Hara can be bossy sometimes, but this is no reason to expel her from the group. This would be a big scandal, and you need to remember that in K-Pop a group hardly survives a scandal like that. Besides, you've all renewed your contracts for three more years a few weeks ago, and I doubt that the label's management will terminate her contract right now. This would be very costly, and there's also the fact that Park Hara is one of the group's most popular members."

Desperate, Kim Hana told him about the night in Byun Sehun's apartment, and Park Hara's participation in all this. The manager lamented what had happened, especially since he had also encouraged Kim Hana to go out with Byun Sehun, but said that this wouldn't be enough to kick out Park Hara either.

"Moreover, Kim Hana, I'm sorry for saying that, but it's not advisable that you stop being seen in public with Byun Sehun right now..."

"What?!"

"I know it's bad, but if you suddenly end your relationship with him this could be a nasty scandal too... The career of all of you could be over because of that."

Kim Hana couldn't believe it. Her manager had virtually repeated everything that Byun Sehun had said. This was so unfair!

To make things worse, they had to keep working with Park Hara, and pretending that everything was fine in front of the cameras. This was very hard for all the girls, especially Kim Hana. Every time Park Hara smiled cynically at her, she felt the urge to punch her face.

Her friends told her to be patient, though. Together, they would find a way to solve this problem...

END OF PART 74.1

-----

"This is about Byun Sehun, isn't it?" Ye-rin said.

"What do you mean?" Kim Hana asked.

"Hmm..." The little girl murmured, as if she was wondering if she really should say that. "The reason why you are sad today. You said you aren't, but I know you, Kim Hana-unnie. Even before you start visiting me... Remember that I have been *stanning* you for a long time! You're my *ultimate bias* and I love you! I want to see you happy!"

Kim Hana couldn't help but once again her eyes were full of tears. That girl's love was so pure and sincere. If only adults could be like that...

"Fine, Ye-rin, you're right. I'm a little sad today. But what makes you think this is about Byun Sehun?"

"Well, in TV dramas when women are sad like that this is because of their boyfriends."

"Ah! I see" Kim Hana smiled. "Real life isn't always like TV Dramas, though... But in this case... Yeah, you're right again. Byun Sehun did something that hurt me, and I'm sad because of that."

Kim Hana didn't know why she had told this to the girl, and she felt bad for doing so. That girl was seriously ill, and Kim Hana shouldn't be bothering her with her problems. Still, something inside her said that this was the right thing to do. Ye-rin was always so honest that she deserved to know the truth.

The little girl didn't say anything. Instead, she hugged Kim Hana tightly. "That's okay" she said. "Sometimes when I'm sad, I don't want to talk about it. I just like to be cuddled by my mom. I know you don't have mom anymore, so I'll do that for you."

"You're such a sweet and special girl, Ye-rin..." Kim Hana said, touched.

When Kim Hana finally left the little girl's bedroom – about half an hour later – she saw Lee Si-won. The guy seemed a little embarrassed.

"Umm... Sorry, but I was passing by, and I kind of heard you have some trouble... I... I'm sorry to know that."

"Thanks, Lee Si-won."

"You've been helping us so much... Is there anything I can do for you?"

"Unfortunately I don't think so, but..." Kim Hana was still feeling very vulnerable, and started crying again. Lee Si-won touched her arm lightly to try to comfort her, but it wasn't enough. Kim Hana threw herself into his arms and he, surprised and without a choice, hugged her.

She didn't know why she was acting like that. Maybe it was because her period was coming and she was sensitive those days.

"Umm... Would you like to... you know... talk about what's wrong?" he asked.

And then, before she could control herself, Kim Hana told him everything that Byun Sehun had done.

"I can't believe it!" Lee Si-won exclaimed, very angry. "This guy isn't a real man! I would never do something like that if I were your boyfriend!"

"Are you saying that you wish you were my boyfriend?" Kim Hana asked softly.

"W-what? No! I mean... I... I'm just saying that I wouldn't do this with a girlfriend... Whoever she would be... That's all!"

"I see..." Kim Hana smiled. It was kind of amusing to see Lee Si-won so embarrassed. He looked cute this way, and she liked to tease him.

"And what are you going to do now that you two broke up?" he asked.

"Well, we haven't broken up yet... Not officially"

"What?!"

She then explained all the complications involved.

"This is so wrong!" he said. "Now do you see why I think this is a bad career? A girl..."

"Please, don't start it all over again. You've been acting so nicely. Don't ruin it now."

"Fine!" he said, a bit reluctantly.

Some time later, he walked her to the door. Outside, they hugged one last time, and Kim Hana thanked him for the support.

She was feeling a bit better, but what she didn't know was that there was someone watching that scene very closely...

END OF PART 74.2

Ku Tae-Min was a frustrated man. He had always wanted to be an art photographer, but he was already thirty-four years old and it was still a distant dream. In order to survive, a few years earlier he had swallowed his pride and had started working as a paparazzi. It was bad, but his only other option was to photograph weddings, which would be even more degrading – he just hated marriages and all those happy people.

That afternoon was another day that Ku Tae-Min regretted not having listened to his father. If he had went to college instead of spending all his time with his camera he wouldn't be hiding in an empty house for three hours. That was a hot summer day, and the man was sweaty and exhausted.

He was about to give up when the front door of the house across the street was opened. Then, he saw the girl coming out. He was almost certain that her name was Kim Hana, but it didn't matter to him – If there was something he hated more than weddings it was K-Pop, and its frivolous idols. All he needed a picture of that girl doing something reprehensible...

That hunt had started a few weeks earlier. Ku Tae-Min had received a message from an unknown number saying that Kim Hana was secretly visiting that house every week, and spending many hours there. The guy knew her face. The girl was so famous that almost everyone in Korea had already seen her, and she also was dating a popular actor.

After some research, the photographer discovered that in that house lived a middle-aged woman and her two children: a little girl and a young man who was an army sergeant. Now what the idol would be doing there?

Ku Tae-Min began to follow her every week, and found that empty house from where he could get a good view of his target. However, until now, he hadn't been able to shoot anything compromising. He didn't even know what to expect. In his wildest dreams, the girl would be going there to take drugs, or she was having an affair, or even taking drugs while having an affair. But so far, he had got nothing.

In that afternoon, though, Ku Tae-Min saw that she didn't leave the place alone. There was a guy with her, and the photographer guessed he was the sergeant.

"Now this is getting interesting..."

And suddenly, the guy hugged her tightly! Ku Tae-Min began photographing the scene furiously. They held each other for a long time, and the guy was stroking her back while she smiled with her eyes closed. They seemed like a perfect couple in love.

Apparently there were no drugs, but at least the fact that Kim Hana was having an affair seemed unquestionable... *Well, maybe not*, Ku Tae-Min thought. But once those pictures were published with some sensationalist headline the public would be convinced of her guilt.

"It seems I'll be able to pay this month's rent" the photographer said, smiling for the first time in weeks.

END OF PART 74.3



**A few days later...**

Kim Hana woke up hearing several screams in her room.

"Hey, what's going on?" She asked frightened, seeing Choi Hyun and Song Yeon.

"This is something that you have to tell us" Choi Hyun stated, handing her phone.

Kim Hana rubbed her eyes, and then looked at it.

"Oh my gosh!" she exclaimed. "This photo... How did you get this?"

"This is everywhere" Song Yeon said. "A gossip site published it and everyone is sharing the news."

"I can't believe it! H-how... when..."

"Who is this guy, Kim Hana?" Choi Hyun asked seriously.

"He is..." before she could finish, her phone rang. It was the Sweet Dolls' manager, and he was furious. After screaming for a few minutes, he said a car was going to get the girls. They needed to talk right away.

When they arrived at the label's headquarters, Kim Hana realized how serious the situation was when she saw that not only the manager but also some of company's directors and even the CEO were there. They then demanded her to explain who that man was and why she had been photographed with him.

The headlines related to the subject were the worst possible, and some articles even categorically stated that Kim Hana was having an affair with that guy.

"This is not true" she said, crying. "This is Sergeant Lee Si-won. I was at his house because of his sister. "

She told them everything – How she had met the sergeant, and his request for her to visit his sick sister who was a big fan of the "Sweet Dolls". And that was the reason why she was going there often since then.

"That day" she continued. "I was hugging him because I was feeling very sad... and he was supporting me. But that's all! Nothing else happened... And I don't even know how someone took pictures of us!"

"If this story is true..." one of the directors started.

"Of course it's true... sir!" Kim Hana said indignantly, but trying to sound respectful.

"Did any of the other girls know you were going there?"

After an awkward moment of silence, Choi Hyun said: "Well, maybe she has mentioned that..."

"No, unnie" Kim Hana said. "You don't have to lie to protect me. None of them knew, sir."

"Why not?" asked another man.

"I don't know... So much has happened... I guess I just didn't get a chance to talk about it..." Kim Hana said, realizing how lame it sounded.

"It doesn't matter now" said the record label's CEO. "If this little girl really exists as Kim Hana says, maybe we can contain the damage. Maybe we can convince her mother to allow her talk in public and..."

"No!" Kim Hana said, unable to stop herself. "I don't want to expose Ye-rin like that. She doesn't deserve it!"

"I don't think you understand what's going on here, girl! People are convinced that you betrayed Byun Sehun. They won't forgive this. If nothing is done, this is the end of the Sweet Dolls!"

"But that's not fair! I didn't betray anyone. It was Byun Sehun who did that!"

"Again, it doesn't matter! The only important thing now is the public opinion, and people are against you now. I really didn't expect this from you, Kim Hana. We'll figure out what to do. Until then, you'll be moved to another apartment; a more reserved place. And you're forbidden to speak to anyone who isn't in this room, do you understand me?!"

END OF PART 75

The next few days were very tough for Kim Hana. She was locked in another apartment with virtually no contact with the outside world. Her phone had been confiscated, and there was no computer in the place.

She could only follow the development of the scandal in which she was involved on TV, or when someone from the record company visited her. Her bandmates hadn't gone there yet, probably due some director's orders. She was missing them a lot. It was being even harder to deal with that situation without their support.

A few days before, she had seen Byun Sehun on TV. He had a shocked expression, and said that he was heartbroken because of what had happened.

"I never thought Kim Hana could do something like that" he said.

"So, do you believe she actually betrayed you?" asked the host of the TV show.

"I didn't want to, because I love her so much... But she never told me about this *friend* of hers. Also, she was acting strangely in recent times... I can't explain very well, but she was very cold and distant with me..." he stated with tearful eyes.

"Have you talked to her since those photos went public?"

"I tried, but she didn't answer my phone calls, and I don't know where she is right now."

Kim Hana had to admit that that son of a bitch really was a great actor. Seeing him speak, it was hard to suspect he was lying. As expected, he managed to persuade a lot of people. Only the most fervent Sweet Doll's fans were still on Kim Hana's side.

Perhaps due to her deplorable emotional state, the manager of the Sweet Dolls gave her numerous letters of support that had been sent to the record label. She was touched to see that there were still people who believed in her, and they were hoping that everything would turn out well.

It made Kim Hana think about Ye-rin. She hoped the little girl was well, and that all this craziness wasn't hurting her recovery. Still in the early days of the scandal, a reporter managed to talk to Lee Si-won. The sergeant denied that he had any loving involvement with Kim Hana, but he seemed too nervous. This was certainly due to the fact and he wasn't used to the cameras, but it was interpreted differently. In addition, he was manipulated to say compromising things.

"How often did Kim Hana go to your house?" the reporter asked.

"S-she went there a few times... But it wasn't because of me! She just... visited my sister" he admitted, since the press had already discovered Ye-rin's existence.

"But you two were close, right? We can see it in those photos..."

"Not exactly... we just..."

"Have you never found her attractive?"

"No! I mean... Of course she's beautiful... Everyone knows that... But..."

"Did she find you attractive too?"

"What? I...I... Why are you asking that? I don't want to talk anymore!"

After this interview, Lee Si-won and his family could no longer be found. Kim Hana hoped the record label had helped them to go to a discreet place until the situation improved. But she had no idea when that would happen...

END OF PART 76

-----

A few days later, the record label finally chose a strategy to deal with Kim Hana's scandal. It was very simple, in fact, and they hoped the girl's popularity would make it work. They would hold a press conference in which Kim Hana would apologize for her "*unacceptable behavior*", and would reinforce that she hadn't had an affair with Lee Si-won at all.

She should say that she had gone to his house just to visit his sister, who was a big fan of Sweet Dolls. And the most important: she had hugged the guy just to say goodbye, and it had only happened once. Even so, she knew she shouldn't have done it, especially since she was a committed woman, and she would also like to apologize to Byun Sehun, her boyfriend, for this.

Kim Hana was outraged to learn she would have to say that. Byun Sehun was the only person who had done something wrong, but her manager insisted she needed to do that or her reputation would be ruined.

However, as the scheduled day for the press conference approached, another bombshell came out. A Chinese model who lived in Korea said publicly that she had had an affair with Byun Sehun, and stated she knew she hadn't been the only one. She said she was revealing it just because she didn't think that what was happening to the Sweet Dolls' member was fair.

Kim Hana wasn't sure if that was the girl she'd found in Byun Sehun's bedroom. That day, she got so bewildered to see her boyfriend betraying her that she didn't pay attention to the details. Still, she thought this was her salvation. Now, she would no longer be forced to say those humiliating things. She couldn't be wrong, though...

The public wasn't convinced by the girl's statements. Since she was still struggling to be a famous model, people thought she had created that story just for free publicity. Besides, she had no proof, so it was hard to believe her. This way, the Sweet Dolls' manager told Kim Hana that nothing had changed – She still needed to follow the original plan.

The day before the press conference, Choi Hyun, Song Yeon and Jun Sunhwa finally came to visit Kim Hana. The girls hugged each other for a long, long time, and also cried a lot.

"We're sorry, Hana" Choi Hyun said. "We wanted to visit you sooner, but they didn't allow us. How are you, honey?"

"That's okay, unnie. I can understand. And I'm better now that all of you are here. Also..." she sobbed, "I'm sorry... for everything. I didn't want to drag you girls into this mess."

"Don't say that! You don't need to be sorry."

"Now we know you didn't do anything wrong!" Song Yeon said.

"Yeah, and we're here to support you" Jun Sunhwa stated. "You're a team, remember? More than that... You're like sisters, and we'll always be by your side!"

In the face of such expressions of affection, Kim Hana started crying again. She was touched to know she was still so dear to the girls. Everything was fine. She was happy for the first time in many weeks. But then, she heard the doorbell ring...

"Are you waiting for someone else?" Choi Hyun asked.

"No. It must be someone from the record label, I gues..."

But when Kim Hana opened the door, she had an unpleasant surprise.

"You!" she shouted. "What do you think you're doing here?"

END OF PART 77

"Hey, Kim Hana! Can I... come in?" said Park Hara.

"What do you want?" Kim Hana asked, not believing the girl was really there.

"I... Well... I just want to know if everything is okay."

"Oh really? So now do you really want me to believe you are concerned about me? After everything you've done?"

"Look, Kim Hana, I understand you're upset but..."

"What's going on? Who's there?" Choi Hyun asked, going into the living room. "Oh, Park Hara, it's you" she added in disgust. Soon, Yeon Song and Jun Senhwa also showed up.

"I see everyone is already here" Park Hara commented.

"Yes" Song Yeon said. "We're here because we're Kim Hana's *true friends*! And you, Park Hara? What do you want?"

"Well, like I told Kim Hana, I just want to know if she's okay. I would also like to say that if she needs anything, I'm willing to help. I know you girls are mad at me, but..."

"You're right!" Kim Hana stated. "We're really mad, and I think I speak for everyone when I say that we don't want to see you, and we don't trust you! Not anymore! Now, if you don't mind, get out of here! None of this would be happening if it weren't for you!"

"But..."

"Do as she says, Park Hara" Choi Hyun said, stepping forward.

"Fine! Goodbye, girls" and Park Hara then turned away and left the apartment.

"This girl doesn't exist!" Song Yeon said. "How could she dare come here?"

"Well, she's gone now" Choi Hyun said. "Let's try to forget this. We're here to support Kim Hana, after all."

The girls stayed there for over an hour. When they finally said they needed to go (they hadn't been allowed to stay there for too long), Kim Hana accompanied them to the elevator. They said once again that they trusted Kim Hana, and that everything would be fine.

As Kim Hana was returning to the apartment, she heard something weird coming from a passage on the right side of the hallway that led to the stairs. She then went there to find out what was going on.

"Park Hara! Why are you still here?"

Park Hara was sitting on the floor with her head in her hands. When she lifted her face, Kim Hana saw that her makeup was ruined and her eyes were red.

"Umm, I... I just needed some time alone. But don't worry. I'm going now."

"Now you want to convince me that you were crying for real? Is this your new *great plan*? Make me feel sorry for you?"

"Believe what you want, Kim Hana."

"And why would you be sad, after all? Because we treat you badly? Oh, poor you! As if you care about what others think of you! The only thing that ever mattered to you was being famous, right? You've always been willing to do anything to make it true. Congratulations, Park Hara! You got it! Obviously, you can lose all this now, and guess what? It's all your fault!"

"You're right, Kim Hana. I screwed up everything. Are you happy now? I put my professional success above all else, and I regret this. Now I'm famous, but the girls who have been my friends since my teens – the only friends I've ever had – hate me. Just like you, Kim Hana, and I know I've done you a lot of harm."

"Oh, so sweet!" Kim Hana said ironically. "I don't believe anything you're saying, Park Hara!"

"I know you don't. And I didn't come here for forgiveness."

"What the heck do you want then?"

"I just wanted to show you something."

Park Hara took her phone, while Kim Hana looked at her with a puzzled expression. What could she be plotting now?

"Just watch this video, please" Park Hara said, handing the phone.

When Kim Hana pressed play, she got stunned...

"Hey, Kim Hana unnie!" she saw the little Ye-rin saying. "Park Hara unnie came here to talk to us! She explained that you can't visit us now, but said that you're missing me. I miss you too, unnie! I miss you so much! I hope you are well. I don't know why people are saying bad things about you – saying you're a liar. This is so sad... I know you could never lie. Kim Hana unnie is the sweetest person ever! *Hwaiting*, unnie! Now Si-won oppa you talk to you too."

After a quick muffled discussion, Kim Hana saw Lee Si-won, Ye-rin's brother, who seemed embarrassed.

"Umm... Hi, Kim Hana" he said. "I don't know if you really want to see me now... Anyway, I'm sorry for everything that's happening. I tried to explain to a reporter who was chasing me that we have never had any romantic involvement, but I don't know if I was convincing. I don't have experience talking in front of a camera, you know. I hope everything will be alright. You're such a great girl... You've been so good to my sister, and you don't deserve to be in this situation."

When the video ended, Kim Hana was crying again. It was really good to see Ye-rin. She missed the little girl a lot... And also Lee Si-won, just then she realized.

"H-how did you find them?" Kim Hana asked Park Hara, without knowing what was really going on there...

END OF PART 78.1

"I asked our manager, and found out they were in another record company's apartment. So, I just had to go there."

"Simple like that? Did our manager just give you the address?"

"I have a good relationship with him. He trusts me, and I told him that I just wanted to make sure that Lee Si-won wouldn't say anything else that could hurt the group even more. But in fact I wanted them to record this message for you."

"Why?"

"Does it matter? You won't believe me anyway."

"Well, thank you for that, Park Hara. I would say that was very kind of you if I didn't know you have an *'under-the-table plan'*. I don't believe you went there just to make me happy."

"I can't blame you" Park Hara laughed. "But after I left the apartment, I realized something."

"What?"

"I'm absolutely sure now that you'll be fine. This scandal won't harm you."

"Why do you think so?"

"That little girl told me everything you've done. The way you were able to connect with her and supported her in this difficult time... There are very few idols that can do this for a fan. Not because they don't want to, but because this is not something that cannot be learned. Then I remembered your relationship with all of our fans... When you're with them, you're not pretending or acting. You really love them all... You love everything about being an idol. I, on the other hand, just wanted to be famous. But however much I've tried, I've never been as famous as you. That's because you've been sincere all the way long. Now I see people can feel it. And no matter what, Sweet Doll fans will always be with you because you're honest with them. Just like Ye-rin, all of them love you."

Now Kim Hana was more confused than ever. She just couldn't see what Park Hara was planning. If that was an act, she was doing great.

"That's why I know you'll be fine" she continued. "And then I'm sure you and the other girls will remain famous for a long time."

"Me and the other girls? What about you?"

"I'm out, Kim Hana. I'll officially announce it when this mess is over."

"W-what?"

"That's right" Park Hara smiled. "I've done many wrong things, and this idol's life brings out the worst of me. I realized visiting that girl that this isn't my true calling. Also, all of you hate me and I don't want to be a burden to the group."

"Now you're saying this so that I'll be touched and will ask you to stay, right?"

"No. There's nothing you can say to change my mind."

"But we have a contract!"

"I have my means to persuade the record company to let me go."

"And what will you do then?"

"I guess I'm going back to college. And this time I'll do things differently."

"I don't know what to say, Park Hara."

"Well, I just would like to ask you something..."

"What?"

"Tell me, Kim Hana, are you happy? I mean... Are you really happy living as a girl?"

"Why are you asking me that?"

"Well, I was responsible for your transformation, and I'd hate to know that deep down you're feeling miserable. I... I need to know that."

And then, suddenly, Park Hara started crying wildly. That was so surprising that Kim Hana got shocked – she just stood there, unable to move.

"Tell me, please" Park Hara insisted.

"O-of course I'm happy as a girl!"

"That's a relief! Who would guess, right? When I first met you... Well, you were a manly guy. Things could have been different between us if I hadn't been so cruel and selfish. Do you remember we used to date? But I'm glad to know you're happy as Kim Hana. And I have to say that you're very good as a girl! You're so cute, sweet and feminine..."

Kim Hana couldn't understand why Park Hara was saying those things. Was she trying to humiliate her? It didn't seem to be the case.

"Anyway, I'm leaving now" Park Hara said, wiping her tears. "I guess you need to sleep to be ready for tomorrow. But as I said, I'm sure I'll be fine, Kim Hana. You're not like me... You're honest."

Park Hara was already close to the elevator when she turned around again. "Good bye. I hope you can forgive me one day."

"You... You don't need to wait. I... I forgive you. I don't know why, but I believe you're being sincere now."

When Park Hara finally left the building, she could hardly contain her delight. Everything had worked perfectly, and she couldn't believe how someone could be as stupid as Kim Hana.

*She really acts like a silly heroine of some TV drama, Park Hara thought. Well, I guess this makes me the villain. That's okay, though. This is real life, and here there are no happy endings for stupid and innocent people.*

The whole scene had been an act, of course. Park Hara had done all that to make sure that Alex would make the biggest mistake of his life. Yes, Alex. As much as that freak believed he was a girl now, to Park Hara he was just the sissy guy she had feminized. He wasn't and couldn't be a real woman at all.

And now, if everything went as she believed, Alex would be out of the way, and she would be the big star, as she was meant to be...

END OF PART 78.2



### **The next day...**

When Kim Hana entered the press room, she was bombarded by flashes. There were dozens of reporters present and all of them seemed excited, sensing they would have a good story to write later. She then sat down, surrounded by executives from the record label, and faced the people who were eager to hear what she had to say.

Kim Hana was soberly dressed, with a red blouse, simple jeans, and black heels. Her makeup was soft, and her hair was tied in a ponytail. The only adornment she was wearing was a nude bracelet. Her bandmates weren't there, probably because they had not been allowed to go. She didn't like it. Without their support, she felt even more nervous and intimidated.

A little later, the Sweet Dolls' manager announced that the press conference had been called so Kim Hana could clear up the incident involving Lee Si-won, the army sergeant with whom she had been photographed. Then, when all eyes were on her again, Kim Hana began to talk...

At first, she followed the script to the letter. She said she had been at the sergeant's house a few times just because of his sister, who was a big fan of her group. She stated that she had never had any intimate involvement with Lee Si-won.

Then, it was time for the difficult part. She said that, although her acts were completely devoid of any malicious intent, she would like to apologize to Byun Sehun for what had happened.

"You don't seem so assertive about it, Miss Kim Hara" said a reporter sitting in the first row. "Is there something else about Byun Sehun, your boyfriend – or ex-boyfriend, perhaps? – that you would like to share? Maybe something you're hiding?"

This question was followed by many others. Countless reporters started talking at the same time, and the place became chaotic. Kim Hana's first impulse was to keep her narrative. That was what she needed to do, after all. All the record company executives told her that she needed to convince the public that she was deeply sorry for what had happened, even though she believed she hadn't done anything wrong.

But then, she realized she just couldn't. Involuntarily, she remembered what Park Hara had told her the day before...

"However much I've tried, I've never been able to be as famous as you. That's because you've been sincere all the way long. Now I see people can feel it. And no matter what, Sweet Dolls' fans will always be with you because you're honest with them. Just like Ye-rin, all of them love you."

Kim Hana was not being able to think straight at that moment. She was too stressed for that. Thus, she was overwhelmed by her emotions, and Park Hara's speech began to make more and more sense in her troubled mind. Before she could control herself, she said:

"Well, actually there is indeed something else about Byun Sehun that I would like to share..."

END OF PART 80.1